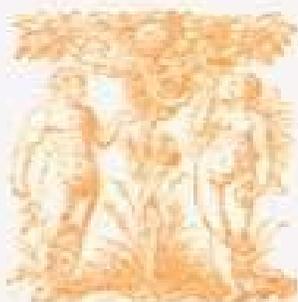




# Did God Really Say That?

“God’s word is true from the beginning;  
Satan’s clever deception is that changing  
times have changed the rules.”



**HAROLD LERCH, SR., P.E.**

# DID GOD *REALLY* SAY THAT?

**A COMPLETE CHRISTIAN LIFE DEPENDS ON A COMPLETE UNDERSTANDING OF WHAT GOD SAID IN THE COMPLETE HOLY SCRIPTURES, BEGINNING WITH THE VERY FIRST VERSE**

**A BOOK FOR TODAY'S CHRISTIANS, DISCUSSING TODAY'S MORALITIES, GOD'S TIMELESS MORALITIES, AND THE FOUNDATIONS ESTABLISHED BY GOD IN THE BEGINNING.**

Author: Harold A. Lerch, Sr. P.E.

Word to the World Ministries  
Middleburg PA 17842 USA

<http://www.word2world.com/index.htm>  
email: [moreinfo@word2world.com](mailto:moreinfo@word2world.com)

Copyright © 2002 by Harold A. Lerch, Sr. P.E.

Did God Really Say That?  
by Harold A. Lerch, Sr., P.E.

Revised © 2018 by Harold A. Lerch, Sr. P.E.

Published by Harold A. Lerch, Sr. P.E.

All rights reserved solely by the author. The author guarantees the contents are original and do not infringe upon the legal rights of any other person or work. No part of this book may be reproduced in any form without the permission of the author.

Unless otherwise indicated, Bible quotations are taken from the Authorized King James Version, Public Domain.

Other references include:

The Revised Standard Version of the Bible. Copyright © 1946, 1952, 1971 by Division of Christian Education of the National Council Churches of Christ in the USA, and used by permission.

Simple English® Bible New Testament. Copyright © 1978, 1980 (International Edition), by International Bible Translators, Inc. Copyright © 1981 (American Edition) by International Bible Translators, Inc., all rights reserved.

The Living Bible. Copyright © 1971 by Tyndale House Publishers, Wheaton, IL. Used by permission.

New Jerusalem Bible with Apocrypha. Copyright © 1990 by Darton, Longman & Todd Limited and Doubleday, a division of Bantam Doubleday Dell Publishing Group, Inc. All rights reserved. Published by arrangement with Doubleday, a division of Bantam Doubleday Dell Publishing Group, Inc.

The Darby Bible. Darby, John Nelson, Public Domain, © 1890.

Webster's Bible. Webster, Noah, Public Domain, © 1833.

Young's Literal Translation. Young, Robert, Public Domain, © 1898.

Weymouth's New Testament. Clarke, J., Public Domain, © 1909.

Biblical texts and clip art were excerpted from:

The Bible Library CD-ROM Disc. Copyright © 1988, 2000 by ELLIS ENTERPRISES, Inc., Oklahoma City, Oklahoma. All rights reserved. The contents of The Bible Library CD-ROM disc may not be used for sale or electronic exchange or transmission without the express written consent of ELLIS ENTERPRISES, Inc., and, where applicable, the individual owners of copyrighted material on the disc.

**We know these things are true by believing, not by seeing.  
2 Corinthians 5:7 LVB**

**Author**

The author, Harold A. Lerch, Sr., is a graduate of the Pennsylvania State University, College of Engineering, and is a Professional Engineer. He has been employed in construction administration and management for a major private-industry corporation for the past thirteen years. Prior to that he was Special Projects Manager for the same corporation, specializing in food manufacturing and material handling.

Harold and his wife of over 30 years, Jeanne, reside near Middleburg, Pa., USA. Their grown children, Harold, Jr., and Joanne, have blessed them with five grandchildren: Mariah, Christian, Drew, Kylee, and Shelly. It is advisable not to ask, "Tell me about your grandchildren."

Harold is founder of Word to the World Ministries, a concern that publishes and distributes complimentary witnessing resources.

**Mission Statement**

This book is written for readers who want to learn more about the foundations that undergird the Christian faith, beginning with the creation, and how one's belief regarding origins should affect our daily lives (and even the lives of non-Christians) six thousand years later. The author writes in a unique style intended to provide both enjoyable reading and challenging content. Scripture passages are included within the text to help make the Biblical integration most effective.

The author has written this book for all Christians regardless of their denominational background. This book is also for Jews who want to learn how science fits with the fact that God created everything from nothing in six days, as God inspired Moses to record.

Christians and Jews worship the same Creator God, and the Jews are part of God's master plan from the beginning right through the Witnesses of the Book of Revelation. Our Jewish friends might be interested in why Christians accept Jesus Christ as the Messiah. The foundation of the Christian religion is that the Messiah has already come and become the Redeemer of sins for all time, and will return to conquer Satan and all our enemies. We who accept Him as our Redeemer will abide with the Conqueror forever.

**Dedication**

The author dedicates this book to his parents, the late Mrs. Pearl Lerch and Ralph H. Lerch. Without his parents' direction, the author's soul might be lost.

## Table of Contents

Acknowledgments	7
Foreword	8
Introduction	11

### PART I IN THE BEGINNING

Chapter 1. The Breath of Life	13
Chapter 2. Out of <del>Africa</del> Ararat	23
Chapter 3. Can the Bible and Science Compromise?	34

### PART II WHAT DOES GOD SAY ABOUT HOW WE LIVE?

Chapter 4. Does It Matter What We Believe?	48
Chapter 5. What Church?	62
Chapter 6. Which Children Should Live?	70
Chapter 7. Adam and Eve, or Adam and Steve?	78
Chapter 8. Till Death Do Us Part	84
Chapter 9. How Many Skin Colors Are There?	91

### PART III WHERE ARE WE GOING FROM HERE?

Chapter 10. Is There an Afterlife?	102
Chapter 11. Christians and Witnessing	111
Chapter 12. Why Do Christians Suffer?	120
Chapter 13. Should the Church Keep Up With the Times?	129

### PART IV DEPART IN PEACE

Chapter 14. Know The Enemy	134
Chapter 15. Summary & Conclusion	143
Appendix: A Summary of Scripture References	150
Outline	181
Recommended Reading	184
Recommended Reading for Children	185
Endnotes	186

## ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

Jesus Christ, our Lord, Savior, and Creator. The convictions received from the Holy Spirit, the Comforter. My parents for how they raised me in the Church. My Father's shared enthusiasm in creation science, and for introducing me to Answers in Genesis<sup>1</sup>, a creation-science ministry. Answers in Genesis for their tireless research and publishing of solid scientific information, and to Ken Ham, Executive Director of AIG, Mark Looy, Founding Director, and staff in presenting the facts (truth) in such a way that even I can understand.

I also acknowledge the early influence in my life by the Reverend Harold Snider, pastor during the first nine years at the church I attended from infancy to manhood. He performed my baptism, and Mrs. Snider taught me in junior church. Reverend Snider wrote the first commentary I ever read on the Bible book now becoming so important to me. Some chapter titles Rev. Snider selected are "Cain's Wife," "The Years of the Patriarchs," "The Antediluvian (pre-flood) Diet," and "How Many Animals." It is the first book that presented the ice age to me in a way that made sense. The title, *That Amazing Book- Genesis!*

Many gifted individuals have influenced this book: Pastor Harold Snider, author Tim LaHaye, theologians Dr. James Kennedy and Theodore Epp, scientists Dr. Gary Parker and Dr. Jonathan Sarfati, and the staffs and scientists at Answers in Genesis and the Institute for Creation Research not mentioned above. Thanks also to Jan Baylor and Pamela Dailey.

Perhaps I am the only born again Christian who has his own rabbi. My friend, Shelley Kolbert, is one of the most knowledgeable men I know on the Old Testament. I think he knows more about the New Testament than most Christians. Shelley critically reviewed this book's contents and syntax so that perhaps it will be readable. Shelley made me think about what I was writing through many deep spiritual discussions.

Thank you, Mom, for the hours and hours you spent checking my accuracy and Bible references. My mother taught me the scriptures 45 years ago, and continues today. I would be so proud if I could say that I measured up to Mom and Dad!

Thank you Jeanne for the moral support you gave your husband during the past four months while he was glued to a computer writing this book.

I am grateful to my uncle, Edwin M. Lerch, who after reading a draft copy suggested scriptures that have been inserted throughout the book.

## FOREWORD

**He has made everything beautiful in its time; also he has put eternity into man's mind. Ecclesiastes 3:11a RSV**

<sup>12</sup>How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations! <sup>13</sup>For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: <sup>14</sup>I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High. <sup>15</sup>Yet thou shalt be brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit. (Isaiah 14:12-16)

Yet Michael, the archangel, when contending with the devil he disputed about the body of Moses, dared not bring against him a railing accusation, but said, The Lord rebuke thee. (Jude 1:9)

<sup>7</sup>And when the thousand years are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison, <sup>8a</sup>And shall go out to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth <sup>9</sup>And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city: and fire came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them. <sup>10</sup>And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever. (Revelation 20:7-10)

*Farewell to God, My Reasons for Rejecting the Christian Faith.* This title on a book by a former evangelist was the second cause of two recent major-effects on my life. The first was when I began to see how modern science, so bent on disproving God, primarily His literal, supernatural creation, is actually digging up the proof pointing toward God and Biblical creation. The exciting news is that Christianity is less of a “blind faith” than since the days our Savior walked the earth. Christianity is alive now more than ever.

However, the enemy is still Satan. He is a clever deceiver. Evolution is his greatest lie. Nice, innocent looking old ladies teach “molecules-to-man” evolution to our children, a religion without a god. Satan’s ruse is to cause us to question God. Look at the Scriptures that retell the account of first sin. Satan’s ploy, essentially, “*Did God Really Say That?*” Let us not believe Satan, let us believe God. It is time for war on Satan!

My Christian life started normally. In fact, I was fortunate enough to be born with a silver spoon in my mouth. Not a spoon of substance (we worked hard for sustenance), but of spirit. My parents were already Christians before I was born, and were founding members of an independent, fundamental church that opened its doors when I was one year old. Our beliefs and those of this church are that the Bible is the Word of God, that the Bible means what it says, and says what it means.”

As I grew older I encountered the secular world. I started hearing about concepts like evolution; Noah’s flood was local, not worldwide; dinosaurs existed long ages ago, outside of the

time frame of the Bible, and; that maybe there was a prior creation that God destroyed before re-creating.

I did not believe any of those theories. I thought that if any one of them were true, the Bible would verify it. But who is really to know? No one was there. No one has proof. So I shrugged it off and thought that it really did not matter. I believed what I believed, they believed what they believed, and it had no effect on me- it did not matter. I did believe that God would reveal the Truth to us in Heaven, and that was enough to satisfy me. I came to find out later that it absolutely does matter! The larger and more joyous surprise was to find that God *has* revealed the Truth to us. The information is here on earth right in front of our noses.

Prior to "my discovery," my Father and I enjoyed discussing problems concerning the theory of evolution. Neither of us had degrees in science, though I am a professional engineer. However, we both did have some common sense. We would ponder how an eye could evolve when there are so many complex parts that must function together. You need a lens, a cornea, a retina, an optic nerve, and so on. If one component is missing, the others are useless. So how would mother nature click her fingers and make all those components happen at once, in both members of a mating pair, so their offspring could have eyes? And how could virtually the same design appear in so many of the kinds of animals? The common sense conclusion is that nature is the work of a designer, not the product of time and chance.

These discussions went on for years. Then during one Sunday afternoon visit, Dad told me that there are scientists that are Christians that claim there is a large body of evidence that points toward Biblical creation. This was exciting news to me, and it was news that fueled our Sunday chats.

A year or so later during another visit with Dad, he popped a tape into the VCR and played a lecture by one of the scientists that is a Christian. It turned out that Dad had a set of ten videos from the organization that this gentleman belongs to. I took them home and watched them all. The information was incredible. The scientific evidence presented fit a "special creation model," not an "evolution model."

A year or so subsequent to that, Dad told me that one of the scientists on the videotapes, Dr. Gary Parker, would soon be speaking at his church. I went to hear Dr. Parker there, and one year later for five nights at a church near my home. He is a wonderful speaker and author. Importantly, he is a paleontologist that, in his own words says, "creation is a faith the facts fit, evolution is a faith the facts fail." Since that time, I have also attended a presentation by the executive director of this organization, Mr. Ken Ham. I have enjoyed many of their books and videos, and their magazine *Creation ex nihilo*. Ex nihilo is Latin for "out of nothing."

"My *great* discovery" came when I realized that what other Christians believe really does matter. I learned over the past few years that what I believed all my life was true; that everything there is or ever was had come about just as told in Genesis chapters 1 and 2. Special Creation is supported by the evidence that is everywhere. Furthermore, I learned that our entire Christian foundation was laid in Genesis.

It was an article in *Creation* magazine that made me see this. The article was of a former well-known evangelist, Charles Templeton (*Creation* vol. 22 no. 3). Charles Templeton, with all his fire for God, and all his knowledge, eventually became convinced that science had proven evolution to be true. Therefore, the Bible was a lie, in his opinion. Ultimately, he wrote a book, the title and subtitle of which tell the story: *Farewell to God, My Reasons for Rejecting the Christian Faith*. The likeness of a sweet-looking senior citizen graces the cover.

That picture has been haunting me ever since I first saw it. Every so often I look at it again expecting the words to change. They have not changed.

As if the Charles Templeton tragedy were not enough reason for alarm, I had another recent astounding experience. I had the opportunity to speak to a theologian from a Christian college. I asked what their official position was on creation vs. evolution. His answer was that they believe that God is the Creator, and that He did it using evolution. I told him that I had good news for him. I told him that the facts better fit the concept of a creator. I sent him literature and a note with more good news for the students; they only need to learn 6000 years of events, not billions of years.

This is why I now say that what you believe does matter, and this applies to many more subjects than to our origins.

Harold A. Lerch, Sr. P.E.

## Introduction

The author has been stirred by the Biblical creation story for several years. It was Mark Looy, Founding Director of Answers in Genesis, who pointed out that creation is only part of the picture. AiG uses the message of Biblical creation to lead into the evangelical message of our need for Christ and the cross.

The author, having (in his words) “a grasp for the obvious” noticed that most books that deal with the evidence of Biblical creation point out the fallacies of humanistic beliefs, but in general do not expound upon their backgrounds. For this reason, the author set out to write a book containing a less-scientific Biblical creation message, establishing the Creator, and including the Biblical basis of God’s ordained moralities that exist unchanged today. The following is the basis for this book:

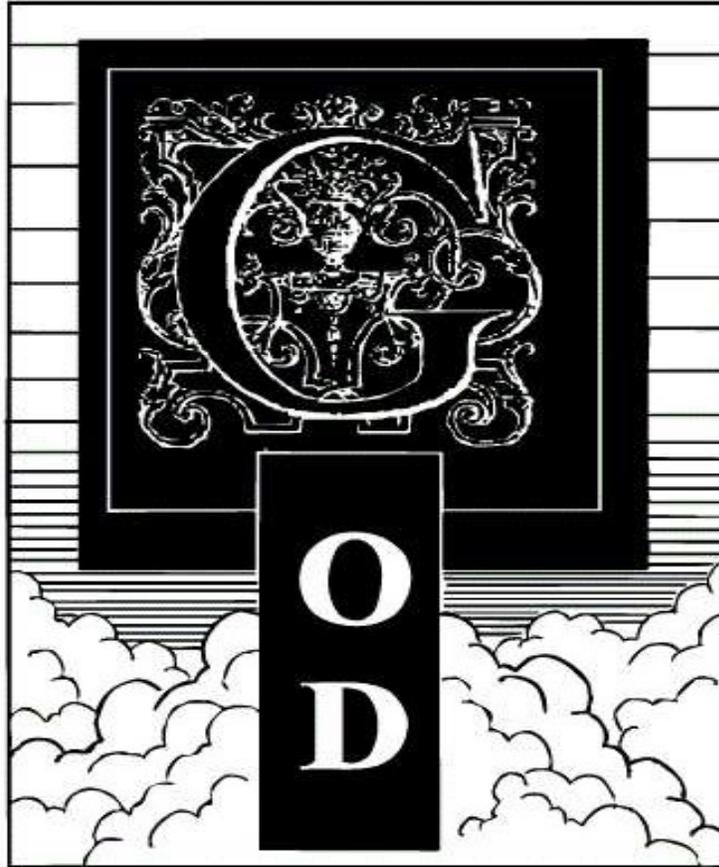
- For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves, it is the gift of God- Not of works, lest any man should boast. (Ephesians 2:8-9)
- But as many as received him, to them gave He power to become the children of God, even to them that believe on His name. (John 1:12)
- But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead? (James 2:20)

Have you ever heard:

- God loves us. Does what we believe really matter?
- Would God eternally condemn “good” people to an eternal punishment?
- Is it enough just to believe something?
- The Good Lord does not care where you go to church.
- Look, you are saved by grace. Once you are saved it does not matter what you do or how you live.
- God has foreknowledge of everything that is going to happen. The pattern is set. There is no sense doing anything but living how you want to live.
- Should we care what others believe? Did you ever hear of “the elect?” “Predestination?” You do not have to bother witnessing. It is all preset anyway.
- You have to remember that the Bible was written long ago. These are changing times, different times. We must be tolerant of the changes and of the rights of others. The church must change, also. Biblical positions on homosexuality, abortion, marriage, and divorce are just not valid anymore.
- Does where we came from matter? What is the difference if God made us or we evolved? Can science, schools, and church just leave each other alone on the subject of origins?

Do you see the contradictions in the selected verses and man’s rationalized questions? The author is strongly convicted that the answers to these questions do matter. Some are a matter of salvation, some of how God wants us to live, and some a matter of God’s Law. What you believe really *does* matter!

## PART I IN THE BEGINNING



But ask the beasts, and they will teach you; the birds of the air, and they will tell you; or the plants of the earth, and they will teach you; and the fish of the sea will declare to you. Who among all these does not know that the hand of the Lord has done this? In his hand is the life of every living thing and the breath of all mankind. Job 12:7-10 RSV.

## Chapter 1. The Breath of Life



<sup>1</sup>In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth. <sup>2a</sup>And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. <sup>3</sup>And God said, Let there be light: and there was light. <sup>5</sup>And God called the light Day, and the darkness He called Night. And the evening and the morning were the first day.

<sup>7a</sup>And God made the firmament. <sup>8</sup>And God called the firmament Heaven. And the evening and the morning were the second day.

<sup>9a</sup>And God said, Let the waters under the heavens be gathered together. <sup>10</sup>And God called the dry land Earth; and the gathering together of the waters called He Seas. <sup>11a</sup>And God said, Let the earth bring forth vegetation. <sup>13</sup>And the evening and the morning were the third day.

<sup>14</sup>And God said, Let there be lights in the firmament of the heaven to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs, and for seasons, and for days, and years; <sup>16</sup>And God made two great lights; the greater light to rule the day, and the lesser light to rule the night: he made the stars also. <sup>17a</sup>And God set them in the firmament <sup>18a</sup>to rule over the day and over the night. <sup>19</sup>And the evening and the morning were the fourth day.

<sup>20a</sup>And God said, Let the waters bring forth abundantly the moving creature that hath life, and fowl that may fly above the earth. <sup>21a</sup>And God created great sea monsters, and every living creature that moveth, which the waters brought forth abundantly, after their kind, and every winged fowl after its kind. <sup>22a</sup>And God blessed them and said, Be fruitful and multiply. <sup>23</sup>And the evening and the morning were the fifth day.

<sup>24a</sup>And God said, Let the earth bring forth the living creature after its kind, cattle, and creeping things. <sup>26a</sup>And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness; and let them have dominion...over the earth. <sup>27</sup>So God created man in His own image, in the image of God created He him; male and female created he them. <sup>29a,c</sup>And God said, Behold, I have given you every herb...and fruit... for food. <sup>30a,c</sup>And to every beast...and fowl...and thing that creepeth...wherein there is life, I have given every green herb for food. <sup>31b</sup>And the evening and the morning were the sixth day.

<sup>2</sup>And on the seventh day God ended his work which he had made; and he rested on the seventh day from all his work which he had made. <sup>3a</sup>And God blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it.

(Genesis Chapter 1, Genesis 2:2-3a)

<sup>1</sup>In the beginning was the Word\*, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. <sup>2</sup>The Same was in the beginning with God. <sup>3</sup>All things were made by Him; and without him was not anything made that was made. (*\*From the Greek Logos meaning concept, designation for Christ*). (John 1:1-3)

## BLIND FAITH?

I have made the earth, and created man upon it: I, even my hands, have stretched out the heavens, and all their host have I commanded. (Isaiah 45:12).

Since the time that Charles Darwin first pondered the origins of life while voyaging through the Galapagos Islands off the coast of Ecuador, the world populace has had to wrestle with the evolution versus creation quandary. Gradually “molecules-to-man” evolution has replaced creationism as the popular belief in the secular world, and unfortunately, in large part in the Christian world. Evolution is now taught as scientific fact in our schools. It is the assumption behind the narratives of nearly all nature documentaries on television, and in magazines and movies. In this way it is taught to our children from their early days, right through college biology, and well into the couch-potato years. It has become the mainstream of conviction, persuading that anyone believing contrary is a quaint lunatic.

The science behind evolution is very complicated. It really does take years to become modestly learned in the evolutionary field. To get the full picture, one must consider information from many different fields; paleontology (the study of fossils), biology, geology, physics, nuclear physics, anatomy, genetics, and many other related fields. No one field dares to feign having all the answers. Let us not lose sight of the fact that evolution is a theory. A theory is only good until it is disproved once.

Creation, on the other hand, can be a comparatively simple concept. The belief is, or was prior to rise of evolutionary thought, that God made everything in six days, rested on the seventh

day, and here we are. There is not much to that. So at the limited number of schools that do allow teaching of creation, it need not take very long to present this point of view.

Many Christians now have taken compromise positions on creationism and evolution, for one reason so as to not look “ridiculous” to the rest of the world, and to accommodate for the Bible not to being in conflict with commonly accepted scientific thinking. In fact, the term “blind faith” is probably used with God and creation more than for any other circumstance. Is it really blind faith?

## BILL AND BOB

Consider a mock conversation between friends Bob and Bill:

**Bob:** *I do not understand how you Christians believe that God made everything in six days like the fairy tale in the Bible.*

**Bill:** It is not a fairy tale. I have my reasons for believing what I read in the Bible.

**Bob:** *Yeah. Like all of you religious guys. I do not mean to belittle you, and I certainly do not want to hurt your feelings, but come on, facts are facts.*

**Bill:** That is right. I do believe the facts.

**Bob:** *Come on. I have asked your religious friends about Bible stuff. They tell me they believe the Bible because they believe in God. They call it “blind faith.”*

**Bill:** I do not call it blind faith, Bob, and I am sorry that some of my friends do. To the contrary, I would call evolutionary thinking blind faith. It is true that I believe God’s word in its entirety, but let us talk about believing in facts.

**Bob:** *I do not see where you are going. The facts are proven by science, and the facts have nothing to do with God or creation.*

**Bill:** That is where you are wrong. Look at the facts. Look at fossils. Did you ever see a living fossil? No. Fossils exist now, not in the past. They show something that was. They do not change, and do not show anything changing. In many places around the world the fossil record is upside down. How could dead animals lay on the ground for long periods of time, and then be covered with earth and fossilize before they decayed? Do you call a scientist’s belief in evolution from fossil evidence science?

**Bob:** *Well, no one scientist has all the answers. You have to consider the information gathered by a number of different scientists. Like a puzzle, each having a piece.*

**Bill:** Yes, they each have a piece. They put them together and add them up to fit their predetermined model. In other words, the scientists take evolution by blind faith.

**Bob:** *I do not know enough about any of this to argue with you. How did you get so smart, anyway? Did you make all this up?*

**Bill:** I did not make it up, but it is interesting to know that you trust in scientists to make decisions for you about a subject you do not know much about. A group of scientists, real scientists, came to our church and presented the evidence for

creationism. I have read some of their books and have seen some of their videos. One scientist, Dr. Gary Parker from Answers in Genesis, explained that “creation is a faith the facts fit, and evolution is a faith the facts fail.” (Dr. Parker was formerly a full time speaker and associate of Answers in Genesis, and is now working at AiG on a part time basis.)

This mock conversation reflects a common problem. The world is ready to accept the scientific model, “what science says,” true or not, myth, legend, or fact, as long as an expert said it. By the way, one definition of an expert is “someone that comes from far away that gets paid a lot of money.” Also, “no prophet is accepted in his own country” (Mark 4:24).

## THEY CAN’T BOTH BE RIGHT

Why do the heathen rage, and the people imagine a vain thing? (Psalms 2:1).

I recently had a conversation with a medical doctor. I do not know anything about his personal life or religious background, but I do know he is a good doctor. He is a specialist, and on the wall at his office was a diagram showing a complicated organ about which he is expert. I pointed to the chart and asked, “Evolution or design?” Not knowing my angle, the doctor tried to dodge the question. Upon my pressing for an off-the-record answer, he said “A lot of people have sat down and discussed this issue. The majority seems to think that evolution is the answer.” He then said, “I guess it’s whatever you believe in.” He must have a good bedside manner.

We can go round and round with our fallible minds and debate both sides of the issues. One might think he has the incontestable proof; that the other side has to concede. But remember, each side examines the facts from their predetermined belief system, or bias. Ken Ham, executive director of Answers in Genesis, in his question and answer book with the intriguing title *Did Adam Have a Belly Button*<sup>2</sup> related the following:

“I’ve had lots of people over the years say that if we could only find Noah’s ark, then we could convince people the Bible’s true.”

Mr. Ham continues, “I’m reminded of a professor who once said to me after I spoke at a secular (non-Christian) college- ‘I don’t care if they do find a big boat on the top of Mt. Ararat and drag it down Main Street, I still won’t believe it’s Noah’s ark.’”

“At another meeting, a man said to me, ‘Who’s to say some priests didn’t build a big boat on Mt. Ararat because they wanted people to believe the story in the Bible.’”

How can two intelligent people examine the same facts and result in diametric conclusions? It is a fact to look at a fossil and say “This is a fossil.” It is non factual to look at a

fossil and determine what year it lived and died, what color its skin was, etc. The examiner fills in the intangibles. A Christian might look at a fossil and estimate that it lived 5000 years ago based on belief that the period of creation was 6000 years ago. A scientist-evolutionist might examine the same fossil and conclude that the animal lived millions of years ago because of how that would fit within their evolutionary time frame (and perhaps because of the faulty dating methods used). Both cannot be right.

For one thing, remember that we do have imperfect minds. Even the most qualified of scientists, Christian or non-Christian, has a fallible mind. Neither was there when The Beginning happened. This does give the Christian a leg-up, or should. The Christian should believe that there was an eye witness, an infallible eye witness, who did what He did and had it all plainly recorded for us. Of course, a non-Christian will not believe this. What is our excuse?

Some of us Christians are duped into saying that the Bible is wrong because the mortal scientists who weren't there at the start, who don't know what happened, who don't know how it happened, who don't believe in God, have said they proved their theory using their corrupt human brains, their unsound methods, and their fallible equipment.

Note: The previously referenced book, *Did Adam Have a Belly Button*, by Ken Ham, is an excellent book that answers 185 tough questions asked by Christians. The same author, with Andrew Snelling and Carl Wieland, wrote another excellent answer book called *The Answers Book*<sup>3</sup>, addressing "the twelve most asked questions on Genesis and creation/evolution."

The correct answer to evolution/creation is of course that God did it in six days. What about the evidence, though? Does it support one or the other, and does it matter?

## THE CREATION ACCOUNT

The one thing above all others that leads me to believe in a "special creation" by a Creator God, no matter what else the Bible says, or how the Bible is interpreted, or what any science books say for or against anything, is contained in the following: And the Lord formed man of the dust of the ground, **and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life;** and man became a living soul. (Gen. 2:7).

The "breath of life" is a very special phrase. When any human or animal dies, all the parts are there. Every molecule is there. The "programming" (DNA- blueprint for life) is there. So if the body was alive one minute ago, why can it not be resurrected? Sometimes we can restore a missing function, like a stopped heart, and "kick-start" it; but, for all other cases the body is missing "the breath of life." Only God has been able to provide the breath of life.

I suppose this is a tough pill to swallow if you are a scientist. It is too simple. Well, creation can be a *very* simple concept if you are a Christian or a Jew:

- The Bible is God’s Word based on one’s belief of self-evidence.
- God means what he says, based on God’s Word and the preceding point.
- He created everything there is in six days and rested on the seventh.

Day 1. Created the heavens, earth, and light. (And time!)

Day 2. Divided the waters, firmament above, water (liquid) below.

Day 3. Divided the dry land from the seas. Created plant life.

Day 4. Created the sun, moon, and stars.

Day 5. Created sea life and birds.

Day 6. Created land animals including dinosaurs. Created man to be fruitful, fill the earth, and subdue it.

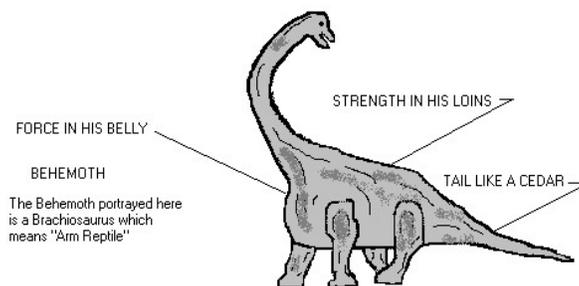
Day 7. After the sixth day, God saw that His creation was very good. He rested on the seventh day from his work and sanctified it.

- God later destroyed His creation with a worldwide flood because sin entered the world. He spared Noah’s family, land creatures, and fowl by instructing Noah to build an ark. Most of the fossil record around the entire world is probably the evidence of Noah’s flood.
- After the flood and tower of Babel, Noah’s ancestors were scattered “abroad upon the face of the earth” (Gen 11:9). The offspring of the animals on the ark would have scattered starting upon release from the ark.
- Rapid continental separation divided the lands into the configuration we know today. Scientists refer to this as “plate tectonics” or “continental drift.”

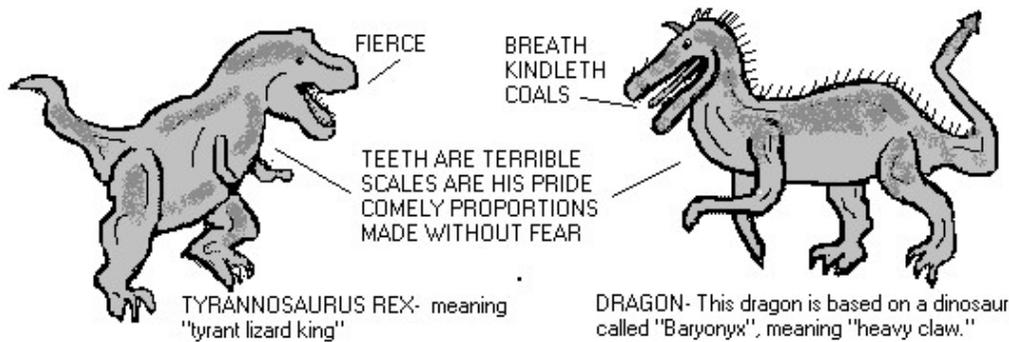
That is pretty much all there is to creation. I suppose that is not complex enough for most scientists. Can you imagine getting your Ph.D. and finding out, that is it?

Possibly further disheartening to many who would like it to be more complicated, there were probably dinosaurs on the ark. That would be the only way to explain the existence in Job’s day of two creatures that sound like dinosaurs. Remember, this subchapter is to show Jews and Christians that believe the Bible just how simple and believable creation is. Do these sound like dinosaurs to you?

One of the sauropods? See *The Great Dinosaur Mystery* by Ken Ham.<sup>4</sup> “Lo, now, (Behemoth’s) strength is in his loins, and his force is in the muscles of his belly. He moveth his tail like a cedar. His bones are like bars of iron. He is the chief of the ways of God. Behold he drinketh up a river, and hasteneth not. (Job 40:15-19, 23).



Perhaps T. Rex? “Canst thou draw out Leviathan with a hook? Canst thou fill his skin with barbed irons, or his head with fish spears? None is so fierce that dares stir him up; I will not conceal his parts, nor his power, nor his comely proportion. His teeth are terrible round about. His scales are his pride. By his sneezings a light doth shine. Out of his mouth go burning lamps, and sparks of fire leap out. Out of his nostrils goeth smoke. His breath kindleth coals, and a flame goeth out of his mouth. When he raiseth up himself, the mighty are afraid. Upon earth there is not his like, who is made without fear. (Job 41: 1, 7, 10, 12, 14-15, 18-21, 25, 33).



The evidence for creation is included with the evidence against evolution in chapter three.

## EVOLUTION THEORY

<sup>3</sup>Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last days scoffers, walking after their own lusts, <sup>4</sup>And saying, Where is the promise of his coming? for since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation. <sup>5</sup>For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water and in the water: <sup>6</sup>Whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished: <sup>7</sup>But the heavens and the earth, which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men. (2 Peter 3:3-7)

The religion of evolution has as its trinity Time, Chance, and Struggle & Death. As its bible, *On the Origin of Species by Means of Natural Selection*, as its televangelist, *Nova*, and its periodical, *National Geographic*. The saints of evolution include Charles Darwin, Thomas Huxley, Ernst Haeckel, and Carl Sagan. The fundamental scripture, quoted by the late Carl Sagan, is “The cosmos is all there is and ever will be.”

The premise of evolution is that “in the beginning” there was a “big bang” by which all of the galaxies, solar systems, stars, planets, moons, and comets were created. After millions or billions of years, a serendipitous arrangement of molecules gave rise to a proper environment to support life. Other molecules by chance resulted in a living cell. Then after millions or billions of additional years, through time, chance, struggle, and death, struggle and death, and more struggle and death- voila. During this period of long ages, catastrophes and climactic changes

caused extinctions. Man alone arose to a supreme level, having evolved from a lower, apelike animal.

There is no room or need for a personal, creator God in the naturalistic religion of evolution. In fact, evolution is Satan's most clever lie. Unlike Satan's temptations such as, "Did God really say that," in the lie of evolution we are told, "We don't need God," or "There is no God." Satan must snicker every time a Christian says, "I believe that God created everything, and evolution is how He did it." Sadly, I fear that a majority of Christians believe just that. The reason a Christian would believe in evolution is because that is what we are being taught by the secular world, and we are not being shown the fallacies of evolution in church. Satan, be on notice, war is declared!

A Christian's belief in evolution does not affect the sincerity of his love for the Lord or his salvation. What it does do is to create a stumbling block in how non-Christians perceive Christians. Everything we Christians believe has its foundations in the book of Genesis, starting with creation by a Personal God. Think of the two sides to the coin. On one side, God: He made everything, He owns everything, we belong to Him, He establishes the rules, we must abide by them, He provides for our salvation, we can have eternal life with Him.

The other side of the coin, "no God": all came to being out of chaos rather than special creation, we live, we die, the end. "The cosmos is all there is and ever will be," (Sagan).

As sad as that sounds, the world loves it. If there is no God, there is no God to answer to. We can do what we want and establish our own moralities. Later chapters reflect on what the world does in good conscience without a known need to answer to God.

## TEACHING EVOLUTION

"In the future, science may perhaps be able to reconstruct a living being. But even though biology makes daily advances, nobody can make definite forecasts. If it ever happens, we shall understand better how life- this astonishing and marvelous thing that allows us to be here to wonder about the world- functions. But as to the question of 'why,' philosophy, religion, and- above all- each one of us must find the answer." (Hagens, Bernard and Lenay, Charles, *The Origin of Life*, p. 72, Barron's Educational Series, Inc., 1986 Hachette- Fondation Diderot/La Nouvelle Encyclopedie, Paris, France.)

This quotation is from a book that is a commentary on the "religion" of evolution. Unlike the Bible that states with certainty "God made" and "it was good," this book admits uncertainty. Words and phrases are used such as "possible scenarios" (plural), "mystery," "divided opinions," and "enigma." Questions are asked such as "what is life" and "does life exist elsewhere, in our galaxy and beyond." My favorite is, "the debate about the origin of life remains alive" (p. 6). And of course, contrary to a loving Creator, evolution implies struggle-and-death, struggle-and-death.

The majority of scientists believe in “molecules-to-man” evolution. It would follow, the textbooks they write favor evolution. The gap created by the “Separation of Church and State” is getting wider and wider. And now, the National Academy of Science has published a guideline for teachers entitled “*Teaching about Evolution and the Nature of Science.*”<sup>5</sup>

Since our youngsters get their foundations in the early grades, I reviewed a book from an elementary school library. This book, *The Origin of Life*, is the book referred to in the previous paragraphs. Following is a summary of what this book tells our children:

## EVOLUTION TEXT

The book opens with a legend from an African tribe that is their account of creation. It states that there are many such legends worldwide that almost always associate sudden events and involve the supernatural. (It is interesting that the legends generally involve a creator and sudden events.) The points of this text follow:

Fifteen billion years ago, a “big bang” disrupts a core of matter and disperses gases throughout the universe. Ten billion years after the big bang, our solar system appeared. The formation of our system resulted from stars formed in the big bang exploding (again), yielding chemical clouds in space, which regrouped into new stars and planets. This was 5 billion years ago.

The first life forms must have appeared after the first billion years on earth. Organic molecules could have formed by lightning discharges in a primitive atmosphere of methane, hydrogen, ammonia, and water vapor. This perhaps would form organic molecules, amino acids, and cells that can reproduce and grow to produce life.

DNA formation is the next step. However, the text recognizes many divided opinions and disagreement on thoughts such as:

- “Life might be the final product of...self-organization. Many scientists disagree completely...” (p. 43.)
- “Any living form must be capable of reproducing *before* it can improve and organize itself” (p. 43, emphasis mine).
- “**Duplication:** At the time of reproduction, the blueprint of the parents (DNA), has to be transmitted to their offspring.” (p. 44-45.)
- “**Transcription:** Since the genetic code expresses the blueprint of the organism, it must be read, understood, and applied.” (p. 45.)
- “**A Beginning...and Evolution:** Let us *imagine* that the *formation of a small portion* of DNA and of some transcription proteins *can be explained*. Would we have the key to the mystery? Yes, because everything *might improve*...” (p. 48, emphasis mine.)

The next section of the book deals with topics such as the pondering of life beyond our solar system. (It is not stated if this includes angels, but I am pretty sure it does not.) It does mention “panspermia”:

“(The famous English astrophysicist [Sir] Fred Hoyle) said: Chemical processes of living things are extremely complex...Resources from the entire galaxy were needed...in order to produce the simplest cell...All interstellar clouds...had to be involved in the beginning of life...Comets are the seeding agents of the universe...The evolution of living beings on earth is assumed to result from the addition of the genetic code of new life forms coming from outer space..”

The book continues with “The Explosion of Life.” It goes on to state that over millions of years, evolution continued. From the simplest life came more complex life, and finally man. Life supposedly started from simple animals that evolved into the first simple plant forms. Plant forms then evolved upward as did the animals.

The concluding sentiment of this book is certainly the most accurate:

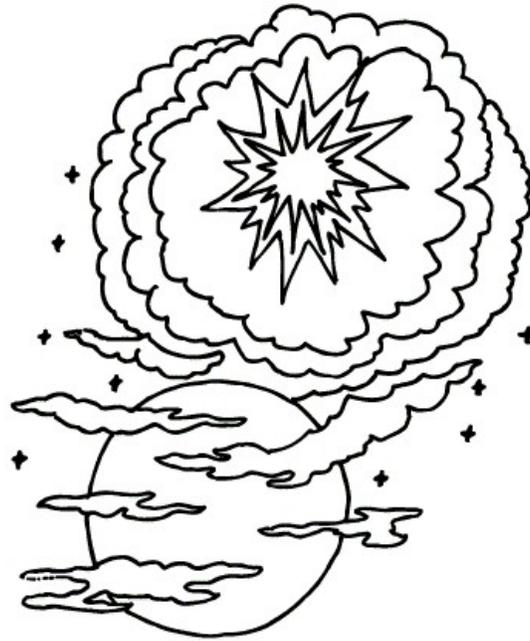
“Each animal is adapted to its environment, and every part of its body is utilized in that adaptation. The immense diversity of living forms is related to the immense diversity of their ways of life. But *how are the appearances of these adaptations, ...new species, ...and new ways of life produced? This is the problem of evolution*, the subject of a completely different type of investigation- the topic of another book.” (pp. 69-70, emphasis mine)

## A FAITH THE FACTS FIT

In the next chapter, we will affirm that all mankind has ascended from the first man, Adam, whom God made in His perfect creation. We will review commentary from the creationist view on *The Origin of Life*, and from eminent creation scientist Dr. Jonathan Sarfati on the new evolution-teaching manual. Dr. Sarfati, a scientist working for Answers in Genesis in Brisbane, Australia, has written a wonderful commentary, *Refuting Evolution*.<sup>6</sup> His book examines many inconsistencies, mistakes if you will, of “*Teaching about Evolution and the Nature of Science*.” This is an excellent work and includes commentary on problems with the theory of evolution. This book is one of many recommended later that show that creation is a faith the facts fit.

God made us and loves us. We were the grand finale of His special creation. Though we sinned and spoiled His perfect creation, He wants us to spend eternity with Him, apart from evil. He sent His Son, the Messiah, to die for your sins: *For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God; Romans 3:23. But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name: John 1:12.* Salvation is a free gift. If you do not know Jesus Christ as your Savior, will you accept this gift right now? Simply pray, “Dear God, I know I am a sinner. I believe Jesus died on the cross for my sins. I receive Jesus now as my Savior. In Jesus Name. Amen.”

## Chapter 2. Out of ~~Africa~~ Ararat



<sup>23</sup>And Jesus himself began to be about thirty years of age, being (as was supposed) the son of Joseph, which was the son of Heli, <sup>24</sup>W/w the son of Matthat, w/w the son of Levi, w/w the son of Melchi, w/w the son of Janna, w/w the son of Joseph, <sup>25</sup>W/w the son of Mattathias, w/w the son of Amos, w/w the son of Naum, w/w the son of Esli, w/w the son of Nagee, <sup>26</sup>W/w the son of Maath, w/w the son of Mattathias, w/w the son of Semei, w/w the son of Joseph, w/w the son of Juda, <sup>27</sup>W/w the son of Joanna, w/w the son of Rhesa, w/w the son of Zorobabel, w/w the son of Salathiel, w/w the son of Neri, <sup>28</sup>W/w the son of Melchi, w/w the son of Addi, w/w the son of Cosam, w/w the son of Elmodam, w/w the son of Er, <sup>29</sup>W/w the son of Jose, w/w the son of Eliezer, w/w the son of Jorim, w/w the son of Matthat, w/w the son of Levi, <sup>30</sup>W/w the son of Simeon, w/w the son of Juda, w/w the son of Joseph, w/w the son of Jonan, w/w the son of Eliakim, <sup>31</sup>W/w the son of Melea, w/w the son of Menan, w/w the son of Mattatha, w/w the son of Nathan, w/w the son of David, <sup>32</sup>W/w the son of Jesse, w/w the son of Obed, w/w the son of Booz, w/w the son of Salmon, w/w the son of Naasson, <sup>33</sup>W/w the son of Aminadab, w/w the son of Aram, w/w the son of Esrom, w/w the son of Phares, w/w the son of Juda, <sup>34</sup>W/w the son of Jacob, w/w the son of Isaac, w/w the son of Abraham, w/w the son of Thara, w/w the son of Nachor, <sup>35</sup>W/w the son of Saruch, w/w the son of Ragau, w/w the son of Phalec, w/w the son of Heber, w/w the son of Sala, <sup>36</sup>W/w the son of Cainan, w/w the son of Arphaxad, w/w the son of (Shem), w/w the son of (Noah). (Luke 3:23-36a)

BACK TO ARARAT

The preceding text takes Jesus' ancestry back to Noah, back to the Mountains of Ararat where Noah's family departed from a safely shored ark. Through the books of Genesis, 1 Chronicles, the prophets, and the New Testament, we can follow the lineage of our generations back to the days of Christ, back to Noah, and ultimately to Adam. Hence, *Back to Ararat*, to the survivors of the flood, to whom all of us would trace our lineage if we could, and further, to the first Adam. The preceding scripture continues:

<sup>36b</sup>(Noah), which was the son of Lamech, <sup>37</sup>W/w the son of Mathusala, w/w the son of Enoch, w/w the son of Jared, w/w the son of Maleleel, w/w the son of Cainan, <sup>38</sup>W/w the son of Enos, w/w the son of Seth, w/w the son of Adam, which was the son of God. (Luke 3:36b-38)

Other New Testament corroboration is Jude 1:14 "And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam..." Old Testament scriptures are Genesis 5, Genesis 10, and 1 Chronicles 1. Christians and Jews have a strong scriptural basis to believe that we all do go back to Noah and Adam. We know that our lineage cannot circumvent Noah, because God's Word tells us that the entire world was judged by water. Only life aboard the ark, and that of fishes and sea creatures were spared.

This world judgment was brought on by sin (Gen. 6:6-7) "And it repented the Lord that he had made man on the earth, and it grieved him at his heart. And the Lord said, I will destroy man whom I have created from the face of the earth; both man, and beast, and the creeping thing, and the fowls of the air; for it repenteth me that I have made them.") But Noah found grace in the eyes of the Lord (verse 8).

It is extremely important to understand what the scriptures tell us in Genesis 6. Because of sin there is death (comp. Gen. 3-19). All flesh was destroyed by the flood "wherein is the breath of life" (Gen. 6:17). The importance is beyond lineage to Noah and Adam, the importance is to help us understand the spreading of mankind and animals to all continents, the differences of languages, the fossil record, the ice age, the age of the earth, faith, witnessing, and our life choices. These points will be addressed in the following chapters. Note the reference to "the breath of life" again in verse 17.

## OUT-OF-AFRICA

The title of this chapter comes from an oft-repeated phrase, most recently appearing as a newspaper headline, *Study reinforces 'Out-of-Africa' theory of human evolution*<sup>7</sup>. In the science world's search for answers outside of God, they sometimes stumble upon the right answer; they just think it means something else. As a means of comparison, I might look in the refrigerator and see a wonderful dessert. My conclusion is that I am going to eat some of it. Imagine my surprise and dismay when Jeanne tells me it is for a student's birthday party, and I cannot have any. The only difference with scientists is, they can make up another theory, but I cannot seem to get another chocolate cake with that white, real-fluffy icing that tastes best served in a large bowl with vanilla ice cream.

The "Out-of-Africa" article states the following: A world-wide DNA study has yielded "the best evidence yet that modern man first evolved in Africa" and scattered to populate the

world; Perhaps the first Homo sapiens “replaced other early humans with virtually no interbreeding,” and; “There was probably a fairly small group that migrated out of Africa and that population probably spread in several directions and grew pretty quickly.”

The article declares that the researchers favor the “Out-of-Africa” theory over a “rival” theory involving “early humans including Neanderthals and Homo erectus,” while others say “the latest findings could allow for a theory that merges both models: humans from Africa later mating with other early humans in distant places.”

For a male-female pair to mate and create a fertilized egg, the number of gene pairs from each parent must match and line up in the same position in the DNA chain. That is why, to take an outrageous example, a human and a horse cannot mate. For a Neanderthal and any “other” Homo erectus, Cro-Magnon, or whatever to interbreed, they would require the same amount of gene pairs. The odds of evolution are ridiculous enough without imagining that two lineages of “early man” evolved and had the good fortune of the same number of gene pairs with matching configuration. Actually, those odds are preposterous.

## OUT OF EVE

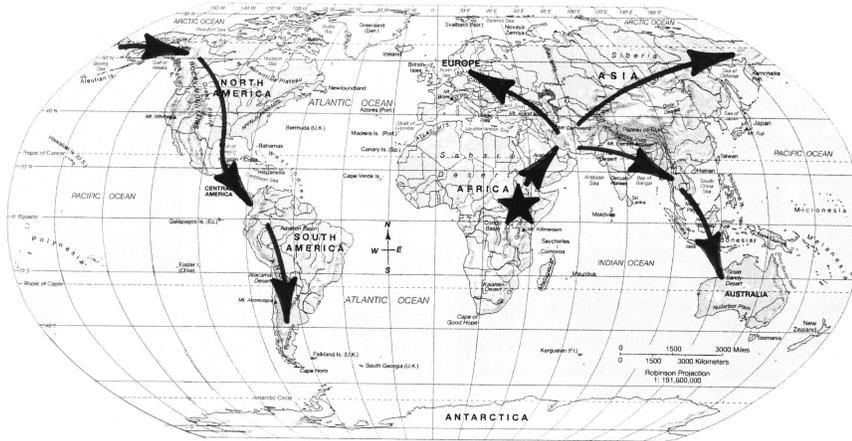
It strikes me as a humorous inevitability that as science progresses, the findings point toward the Bible (for one having an open mind about it). The latest news from the world of anthropology is the results from DNA research pointing toward a single female ancestor, “Eve.” Of course science would not concede that Eve could be the Biblical Eve.

What this Eve story is all about revolves around mitochondrial DNA. Mitochondria are organelles found in nearly every cell. They are passed from mother to child and are *only* inherited from the mother. By sampling mitochondria from people groups around the world, scientists are able to trace lineages toward a common ancestor or ancestors.

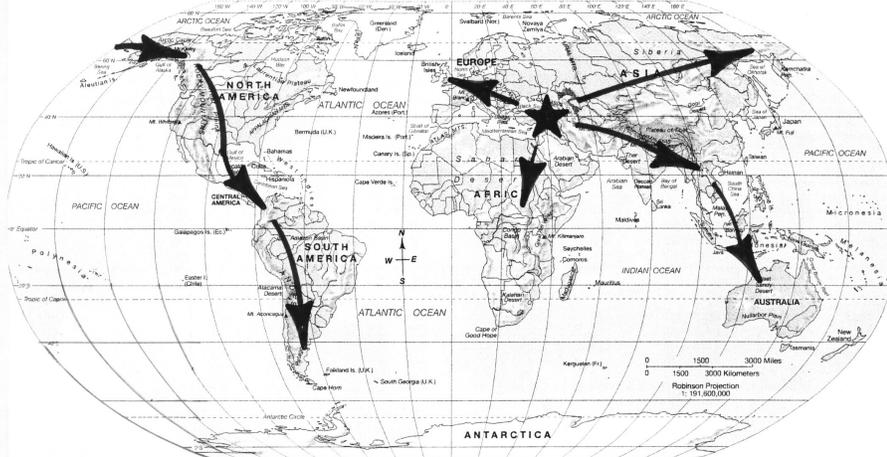
The Discovery Channel aired a special in 2002 called Real Eve. The program opens by showing portraits of African mothers and infants. The narrator announces, “This woman is the mother of mankind, the genetic Eve from whom we all descend. She lived 150,000 years ago in East Africa and every one on earth is related to her.”

The program continues for two interesting hours explaining how the descendants of this Eve traveled to the rest of the world. First into what is now Yemen and the Middle East, then to Asia, Malaysia, and Australia. Also, some to China and eventually the Americas. Later, descendants living in the Middle East migrated North and West to the Balkans and Europe.

As the migration routes were mapped, I noticed a similarity to how a creationist could map the spreading of civilization from Ararat, the “dock” of Noah’s ark. The only difference would be the direction of one arrow from Africa to the Middle East. (See map.) This might not be hard to fathom because all of the people groups around the world each come from a single “granddaughter” of Eve. However, in Africa they seem to come from several granddaughters. In fact, this is the reason that the writers of Real Eve considered the Africans older, because of more variations.



“Eve” or “Out-of-Africa” migration route. From Africa to present day Yemen, then to all points from there.



Possible Biblical migration route from Mount Ararat into all the world.

Previously, evolution and racism have at times gone hand-in-hand. An interesting point made on this show was, “Under the skin we are all very much the same,” and “If we look at the DNA of all of us... we show less variation than we would find in a small group of (apes).” The view that the first humans were dark skinned was refreshing also rather than the dark skin thought to be a “curse.”

The Bible certainly agrees that we all came from the real, Real Eve.

## SCIENTIFIC ALTERNATIVES TO OUT-OF-AFRICA

From Compton’s Interactive Encyclopedia on *Panspermia*: “Many theories have been developed to explain how life first originated on Earth. Some people theorize that microorganisms reached Earth from another planet. Most scientists discount this idea, called panspermia, because the radiation in space would kill cells or spores before they reached Earth. Instead, they believe that terrestrial life evolved from nonliving matter on the primitive Earth.

Then there is the theory that extraterrestrials planted us here as an experiment. This is an excellent way to get around the evidence supporting creation, not evolution, yet does not require a creator-God. I have not heard where the extraterrestrials come from, but the assumption is that these ET's could sow the seeds of panspermia or brew primordial soup. In theory, these ET's could have appeared as the result of more superior ET's from somewhere else sowing and brewing, which previously evolved somewhere else.

The odds for finding extraterrestrial life might be slimmer than the impossible odds of molecules-to-man evolution occurring. From Compton's, on Extraterrestrial Life: "The search for life away from planet Earth has been called a science without a subject matter. Despite the countless hours that dedicated scientists and amateurs alike have spent searching the skies, there is no evidence that life exists anywhere in the universe except on Earth<sup>8</sup>." Fortunately for science, odds can be "overcome" in their minds.

Also found in Compton's: "The Green Bank equation, devised by astrophysicist F.D. Drake, represents an *attempt to estimate* the number of technically advanced civilizations in the Milky Way galaxy. It expresses mathematically the relationship of the number of stars, the number of stars with planetary systems, the number of planets in each system having conditions suitable for the origin of life, the number of planets on which life could actually develop, the number of those planets on which intelligent life could evolve, the number of intelligent populations that could develop civilizations capable of interstellar communications, and, finally, the average lifespan of technical civilizations. *Depending on how estimates for various terms in the equation are made, the number of advanced civilizations in the Milky Way is estimated at from 1 to 1,000,000<sup>8</sup>.*" (Emphasis mine.) (I could estimate in that range, and I know that "1" is a good number because it already happened- author.)

## MISSING LINKS

The archaeologists (diggers) and paleontologists (fossil experts) have looked long and hard for the missing links that connect "early" species with "modern" species. They have not found any skeletal remains that connect humans to an early ape-man predecessor, hard as they try. Many times bones have been found and assembled, histories conjured, only later to be debunked. Skeletons are assembled in hunched-over positions because it is assumed that in a transition from ape-to-man, that is how the "animal" would have walked. Stories appear from minor skeletal assemblies, make the headlines, later are disproved, and quietly fade away. My favorite story is of a would-be human ancestor called "Nebraska Man."

## NEBRASKA MAN

Nebraska Man was "found" by archaeologists who went on to reconstruct the lifestyle of these people, what they ate, their social structure, and so on based on the evidence found at this site. The discovery was considered by scientists at that time to be very important. Nebraska Man was used at the infamous Scopes trial on the side of the evolutionists. Years later, further digging proved Nebraska Man to be a *pig*, not a human. Unfortunately this discovery was after the Scopes trial decision and damage were done. As usual, there was no big announcement about

the mistake, no big retraction, no re-opening of the Scopes trial. Their colleagues often refute the mistakes of scientists, but this tends to be away from the public eye and ear.

## CREATION SCIENCE AND OUT-OF-AFRICA



It is so simple when one turns to the book of Genesis and accepts it as God's Word, all of it. I know no better way to answer science with Out-of-Africa, or one small population in one place, than in reading the Creation account in Genesis. And I know no better way to explain how science should recognize this "out-of-Eden" than to quote directly one of the most articulate and authoritative men I know: "In the cytoplasm of our cells are organelles called 'mitochondria.' These structures also contain some DNA that is only inherited from the woman. In analyzing this DNA in humans all over the globe, scientists showed that all humans on earth inherited this from one woman. At first, this research indicated that the woman...lived about 100,000 to 200,000 years ago. However, later research on the mutation rate also resulted in another startling conclusion- this woman had to live about 6,000 years ago. This fits beautifully with the time line of history as recorded in God's Word.<sup>9</sup>"

If you want to get serious in learning about DNA, I suggest you read *In the Beginning Was Information*, by Dr. Werner Gitt. Please see Recommended Reading.

## Y2K THEORY

An interesting theory came about during the soul-searching that occurred during the Y2K-fevered days of late 1999. This theory is supported by some scientists, some leading Christians, and has found documentation in written history. The theory is as follows:

Forces external to what is now known as earth and our solar system at some time previous to our history set in action events that formed not only our galaxy, but all that we know

of the universe. The complete universe was not formed all in one big bang, but through a series of multiple events, perhaps sporadic. A sporadic formation would still fit into a kind of revised “big bang” theory, a “little bangs” theory perhaps, and would not conflict with the law of conservation of angular momentum that currently haunts the big bang theory.

Earth was properly positioned in orbit from the sun by the use of nuclear powered propulsion devices so powerful that the backwash of the rocket/jet-stream caused the lunar craters we see today, and could offer the only plausible explanation to date for comets. After the environment on earth was suitable for life, these same highly intelligent beings from beyond our solar system brought life to our blue planet. First simple forms, building up to the higher level creatures, and finally man. Small numbers would have been introduced at first, and allowed to breed and multiply. Perhaps man was built on a physical model similar to our “parental” units. That is, using similar design for the lesser animals (similar eyes and how they work, skeletal structure, hair, and so on), which is what we see today. Man also would have been introduced in small numbers. Being at the top of the food chain, man would not be encouraged to overpopulate. Monitors were assigned to earth to observe our doings. They remain with us yet today. We cannot see them because they are in a different dimension.

The first attempt at this experiment by the extraterrestrials failed, as first shots sometimes do. It was decided by these beings to eradicate the first attempt and give it another whirl. It is believed that somehow the world was inundated by water, drowning all life. The fossil record upholds this portion of the theory. Things are buried upside down; there are sea creature fossils on high mountains, etc.

Similar to the first experiment, life forms were somehow re-introduced in small numbers and allowed to fill the earth to what we know it as today. This scattering was accomplished by causing cultural differences in cluster-groups, which encouraged separation. Finally the earth’s crust shifted, continents separated and people-groups were further isolated. The end.

Y2K Cast	ETs	God.
	Small bangs	Creation days 1 through 4.
	Simple forms	Creation days 5 and 6.
	Higher forms	Creation days 5 and 6.
	Man	Creation day 6.
	Monitors	Angels.
	Flood	Noah’s flood.
	Scattered	Tower of Babel (see later this chapter).
	Moon craters	Acne on the man-in-the-moon from eating cheese.
	Nuclear Devices	Literary license
	Christians and scientists that believe	Some of each.

I know that you saw through this from the start, but I had fun making it up. How ludicrous is the Y2K Theory versus some of the other things you have heard?

## FURTHER OUT-OF-ARARAT

<sup>1</sup>**Now these are the generations of the sons of Noah, Shem, Ham, and Japheth:** and unto them were sons born after the flood.

<sup>2</sup>**The sons of Japheth;** Gomer, and Magog, and Madai, and Javan, and Tubal, and Meshech, and Tiras. <sup>3</sup>And the sons of Gomer; Ashkenaz, and Riphath, and Togarmah. <sup>4</sup>And the sons of Javan; Elishah, and Tarshish, Kittim, and Dodanim. <sup>5</sup>By these were the isles of the Gentiles divided in their lands; every one after his tongue, after their families, in their nations.

<sup>6</sup>**And the sons of Ham;** Cush, and Mizraim, and Phut, and Canaan. <sup>7</sup>And the sons of Cush; Seba, and Havilah, and Sabtah, and Raamah, and Sabtecha: and the sons of Raamah, Sheba, and Dedan. <sup>8</sup>And Cush begat Nimrod: he began to be a mighty one in the earth. <sup>9</sup>He was a mighty hunter before the Lord: wherefore it is said, Even as Nimrod the mighty hunter before the Lord. <sup>10</sup>And the beginning of his kingdom was Babel, and Erech, and Accad, and Calneh, in the land of Shinar. <sup>11</sup>Out of that land went forth Asshur, and builded Nineveh, and the city Rehoboth, and Calah, <sup>12</sup>And Resen between Nineveh and Calah: the same is a great city. <sup>13</sup>And Mizraim begat Ludim, and Anamim, and Lehabim, and Naphtuhim, <sup>14</sup>And Pathrusim, and Casluhim, (out of whom came Philistim,) and Caphtorim. <sup>15</sup>And Canaan begat Sidon his firstborn, and Heth, <sup>16</sup>And the Jebusite, and the Amorite, and the Girgasite, <sup>17</sup>And the Hivite, and the Arkite, and the Sinite, <sup>18</sup>And the Arvadite, and the Zemarite, and the Hamathite: and afterward were the families of the Canaanites spread abroad. <sup>19</sup>And the border of the Canaanites was from Sidon, as thou comest to Gerar, unto Gaza; as thou goest, unto Sodom, and Gomorrah, and Admah, and Zeboim, even unto Lasha. <sup>20</sup>These are the sons of Ham, after their families, after their tongues, in their countries, and in their nations.

<sup>21</sup>**Unto Shem** also, the father of all the children of Eber, the brother of Japheth the elder, even to him were children born. <sup>22</sup>The children of Shem; Elam, and Asshur, and Arphaxad, and Lud, and Aram. <sup>23</sup>And the children of Aram; Uz, and Hul, and Gether, and Mash. <sup>24</sup>And Arphaxad begat Salah; and Salah begat Eber. <sup>25</sup>And unto Eber were born two sons: the name of one was Peleg; for in his days was the earth divided; and his brother's name was Joktan. <sup>26</sup>And Joktan begat Almodad, and Sheleph, and Hazarmaveth, and Jerah, <sup>27</sup>And Hadoram, and Uzal, and Diklah, <sup>28</sup>And Obal, and Abimael, and Sheba, <sup>29</sup>And Ophir, and Havilah, and Jobab: all these were the sons of Joktan. <sup>30</sup>And their dwelling was from Mesha, as thou goest unto Sephar a mount of the east. <sup>31</sup>These are the sons of Shem, after their families, after their tongues, in their lands, after their nations.

<sup>32</sup>These are the families of the sons of Noah, after their generations, in their nations: and by these were the nations divided in the earth after the flood. (Genesis 10)

The preceding scripture tells us where Noah's descendents traveled in the generations following the flood. Just as *Out-of-Africa* supposes, a small initial population base booms into many, which spreads and spreads. There is no interspecies breeding, as there are no other groups with which to mate. The gene pool reduces, and family groups take on certain characteristics (a bias toward dark or light skin, hair, or eyes for example). Later, because of the tower of Babel, there is a further spread resulting from the confusion of language. Later yet there is further segregation as the continents drift apart. Please see chapter 9 for deeper discussion on the topic of "races."

## CAIN'S WIFE

Now might be the perfect time to address one of the most frequently asked questions encountered when discussing the Biblical view of origins. The Bible tells us that Adam was the first man. It also tells us where Adam's wife came from; God took one of Adam's ribs and created a woman. We know where Cain came from; he was the son of Adam and Eve; but what about Cain's wife?

Do we lose our attention spans after we read Genesis chapters 1 and 2? The Biblical account of our origins seems to slow down after chapter 2 for many readers. If we continue to read, we are told that Adam lived for 930 years. That is a long time. He could have fathered many children. In fact, according to Genesis 5:4, Adam and Eve had many children: *And the days of Adam after he had begotten Seth were eight hundred years: and he begat sons and daughters.* Cain's wife was most likely his sister. The gene pool was nearly pure at that time, so the dangers affecting children from marrying close relatives did not exist. The laws against incest did not come until well after Noah's Flood, and were recorded by Moses: *None of you shall approach to any that is near of kin to him, to uncover their nakedness: I am the Lord. Lev. 18:6.* In fact, Noah's offspring would have faced the same situation, except that it really was not a "situation" at that time in our history.

Many people use the "Cain's wife" question as an anti-creation-pro-evolution point. Do those stuck on this question believe that hundreds of the same people-kind spontaneously generated to form a pool of unrelated breeders to kick off the evolutionary chain of our first ancestors? No. Evolution, which is a hard pill to swallow anyway the more you think about it, logically would have had the same "problem." With God it was a plan, not a problem.

## LOGISTICS OF NOAH'S FLOOD

The possibility of Noah's flood raises many perplexing questions for many people: where did all the water come from; was the ark big enough for all the animals to fit, and; how could there be enough food on the ark? After answering these questions, let us discuss the possibility of all of the dinosaur kinds being on the ark.

Where did all the water come from? *And God said, Let there be a firmament in the midst of the waters, and let it divide the waters from the waters. And God made the firmament, and divided the waters which were under the firmament from the waters which were above the firmament: and it was so. Gen. 1:6-7.* In addition to the waters on the earth, there were waters

above the earth at that time<sup>10</sup>. The earth was very different while still a perfect creation. These waters above created a stabilizing effect on the climate of the earth, making it uniform, an “Eden” all over earth. There were also “fountains of the deep.” *In the six hundredth year of Noah's life, in the second month, the seventeenth day of the month, the same day were all the fountains of the great deep broken up, and the windows of heaven were opened.* Gen. 7:11. We cannot know how much water there was on the surface, above, and beneath the earth before the flood. We also do not know how high the mountains were before the flood. Since the present surface of the earth is mostly water, covered by deep oceans, it is not too hard to believe that things could be rearranged and the earth totally immersed.

Where did the water go? How could it cover the highest mountain? Well, who knows how high the tallest mountains were before the flood. God inspired David to write these verses: *You clothed the earth with floods of waters covering up the mountains. You spoke, and at the sound of your shout the water collected into its vast ocean beds, and mountains rose and valleys sank to the levels you decreed. And then you set a boundary for the seas, so that they would never again cover the earth.* Psalms 104:6-9 Living Bible.

Was the ark big enough for all the animals to fit? I would say! God commanded Noah: *Make thee an ark of gopher wood; rooms shalt thou make in the ark, and shalt pitch it within and without with pitch. And this is the fashion which thou shalt make it of: The length of the ark shall be three hundred cubits (450 feet), the breadth of it fifty cubits (75 feet), and the height of it thirty cubits (45 feet). A window shalt thou make to the ark, and in a cubit shalt thou finish it above; and the door of the ark shalt thou set in the side thereof; with lower, second, and third stories (3 stories high) shalt thou make it.* Gen: 6:14-16. The three stories totaled over 100,000 square feet! More than two football fields. (Creation scientists have estimated that there were probably less than 30,000 animals on board, and the massive ark could easily accommodate that many.)

How could there be enough food on the ark? We do not know exactly how many animals there were. God would only need to send pairs from each *kind* of animal. For example, there are many breeds of dogs that likely came from one dog kind, perhaps the wolf. Only a pair of the original kind would have been needed on the ark. The same could apply to horses, cats, cattle, deer, bird kinds, and so on. God could have caused the animals metabolisms to slow down, which would greatly reduce the amount of food required, and the “barn work.” Perhaps some hibernated. God would have a logical way, would He not?

Dinosaurs? How could they fit? Were they extinct by then? There is nothing in the Bible to cause us to believe in any extinctions before the flood. In fact, with the favorable climate around the world prior to the flood, extinctions are rather doubtful. It is fair to believe that there were dinosaurs on the ark. Job chapters 40 and 41 (written after the flood) describe what are probably large dinosaurs, “behemoth,” and “leviathan.” Would all these big dinosaurs fit on the ark? Most dinosaurs are not 100-ton beasts, but are more the size of a sheep, on average. Even the largest dinosaurs are small when born. Could Noah have taken young dinosaurs? That is what I would have done. You could get a lot of teenage (or baby) dinosaurs and young elephants on an ark the size of Noah’s!

## SUNKEN CITIES

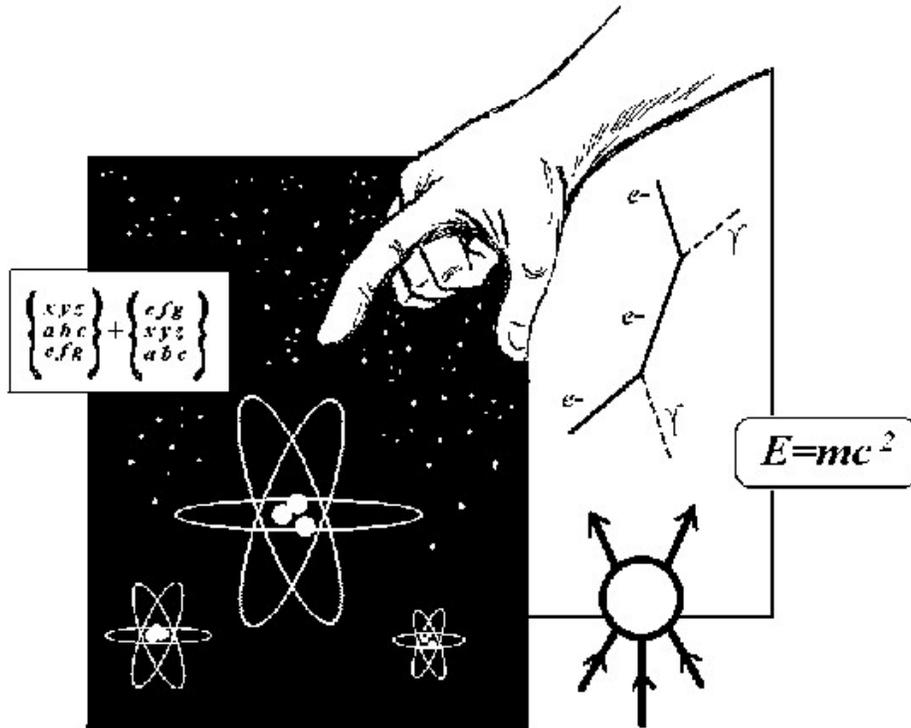
I recently watched a television special about cities sunken beneath the seas. These cities presented the investigators with an enigma. Who built them? When? How? What happened to the people? We know little about the earth and geography before the flood. Could these cities be antediluvian (i.e. pre-flood), buried in water by Noah's flood? I think that is a distinct possibility. I also believe that mankind was much further advanced at that time than most archaeologists would have us believe. Remember, Adam was made in a perfect creation. Our minds (gray matter) and bodies have been affected by thousands of years of degradation. See recommended Reading, *The Puzzle of Ancient Man*, Donald E. Chittick, Ph.D. Mainstream archaeologists need to have our predecessors fit into millions of years of evolutionary processes.

We do know there were cities and fine crafts before the flood: *And Cain knew his wife; and she conceived, and bare Enoch: and he builded a city, and called the name of the city, after the name of his son, Enoch...And Adah bare Jabal: he was the father of such as dwell in tents, and of such as have cattle. And his brother's name was Jubal: he was the father of all such as handle the harp and organ. And Zillah, she also bare Tubalcain, an instructor of every artificer in brass and iron: and the sister of Tubalcain was Naamah. Gen. 4:17, 20-22.*

It is very possible that we are finding pre-flood cities and civilizations, beneath the sea and on land as well. Further examination may one day prove this.

As if sin and death were not enough for us to bring on the earth, we made things so bad that God had to destroy it all. But, Noah found grace in the eyes of the Lord, and so can we. *For by grace are ye saved through faith, and that not of yourselves- Eph 2:8.* Do you have a personal relationship with the Savior, Jesus Christ? Do not to die without Him! Ask Jesus, "Dear Jesus, I am a sinner. I want the gift of grace, salvation. Please forgive my sins. I receive you as my Savior. In your name I pray. Amen."

## Chapter 3. Can the Bible and Science Compromise?



<sup>14</sup>And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousands of his saints, <sup>15</sup>To execute judgment upon all, and to convince all that are ungodly among them of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard speeches which ungodly sinners have spoken against him. <sup>16</sup>These are murmurers, complainers, walking after their own lusts; and their mouth speaketh great swelling words, having men's persons in admiration because of advantage. <sup>17</sup>But, beloved, remember ye the words which were spoken before of the apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ; <sup>18</sup>How that they told you there should be mockers in the last time, who should walk after their own ungodly lusts. <sup>19</sup>These be they who separate themselves, sensual, having not the spirit. (Jude 1:14-20)

Can the Bible and science compromise? Only if the following makes sense: “Well, maybe a little conciliation is possible. God, being the loving God He is, would not mind compromising with some of our top scientists, the most brilliant minds that the 21<sup>st</sup> century can offer. We *are* smart. We have come a long way. God would surely compromise with twentieth century Einstein’s and Sagans.” Can Christians compromise with scientists, even though scientists cannot produce life like God? Even though they do not know how the universe was formed, like God? Or when? Even though scientists (and doctors) cannot heal miraculously, supernaturally, like God? Even though many do not believe in God? Even though many are among the scoffers we are warned about in 2 Peter 3, and the murmurers in Jude?”

All scientists do not believe in evolution as the populace assumes. The renowned zoologist Jack Hanna, during a 1997 appearance on Larry King Live, was showing live animals. Mr. King commented that the animals “evolved,” and Mr. Hanna interjected, “God made them

for our enjoyment.” My father was very pleased with Mr. Hanna’s remark, and exchanged letters with Mr. Hanna to express his delight. Dad was very proud of the autographed photo that Mr. Hanna sent to him.

## OPPOSITES THAT OPPOSE

Hardcore evolutionist thinkers, those who desire to replace the supernatural with naturalistic science, soft-sell with lines like, “We are not trying to take your religion away, just open our children to learning the scientific, etc.” First, Christians should not compromise with doctrine that comes from outside of the Bible. If it is outside the Bible, it is not doctrine then, is it? The proof of scripture comes from within. The Bible does not contradict itself, and the meaning never changes. It is the intent of this book to be true; but, this is not the infallible Word of God.

Would evolutionist-scientists compromise their beliefs with the Bible? Remember the university professor who told creationist Ken Ham he would not believe Noah’s ark were true if they dragged it down Main Street! Tens of thousands of people saw Jesus in the flesh. Did they all believe who He was, even when they saw Him perform miracles? No. Those who wanted to believe saw, and they believed. Those who did not want to believe saw, and they did not believe. *And they were offended in Him. But Jesus said unto them, A prophet is not without honor, except in his own country, and in his own house. And He did not many mighty works there because of their unbelief.* (Matthew 13:57-58).

A scientist who believes in evolution because he does not want to believe in God is certainly not going to compromise his beliefs with the most obvious of proof. The other side of this, however, is currently a clever ruse used to get Christians to compromise. For example, the following quote: “President of the National Academy of Sciences Bruce Alberts said: ‘There are very many outstanding members of this academy who are very religious people, people who believe in evolution, many of them biologists’<sup>11</sup>.” This statement is not true. There are not “many members of (NAS) who are very religious people.” That statement is a deceptive smokescreen.

Further, how can the divine scriptures compromise with science when the science books are full of mistakes? The following sections of this chapter outline weaknesses of evolutionary resources taken from popular text and video sources.

## *THE ORIGIN OF LIFE* (TEXTBOOK)

In the last chapter we skimmed through an evolution textbook, *The Origin of Life*<sup>12</sup>. As we address the question, “Can the Bible and Science Compromise,” let us contemplate evolution from a common sense viewpoint, and the same consideration of the text. Evolution means onward and upward by time and chance, in effect.

An evolutionist would presume that the first living organisms did not have ears. Over long ages, early in the evolutionary chain, some animal would have developed hearing. This function would be passed along to future reptiles, amphibians, birds, and mammals. The assumption would have to be that suddenly, some primitive animal developed something to

receive sound waves, something to convert them for transmission through the nervous system, a system of nerves devoted to hearing, and a method for interpreting the signals. All at once. That defies logic, but suggests design. One for God.

Look at any organ of the most simple of animals. There are generally a lot of parts that all had to occur at once for the whole to work. How could that happen? What does the evolution textbook have to say that does not agree with common sense? Does evolution conflict with itself?

The Bible asserts that God created living beings to reproduce (replenish) after their kind. Evolution alleges one species reproduces to a more favorable species. On page 6 the text asks, "What is life?" On pages 9-10, it is explained that one of the important characteristics of life is self-reproduction. The authors state that the offspring of pigeons are pigeons, whales are whales, etc. Yep, that is what God says, too. Strike one up for science compromising with the Bible, and give God another check mark.

From where did matter come? "Our universe began 15 billion years ago in...the Big Bang, which liberated an incredible amount of energy" p16. Where did the matter come from that preceded the Big Bang? What created the laws of order (atomic structure)? They believe that matter always was, but God could not always have been. Science has no explanation for where matter came from and what originated the laws of physics. The Bible says that God created the heavens and the earth. This claim then is that God made matter. How could God make matter? The law that makes an atomic bomb so powerful is  $E=mc^2$ , energy equals the speed of light squared times mass. Rearranged, mass (matter) equals energy divided by the speed of light squared. That means, lots of energy can make matter from nothing, "*ex nihilo*" in Latin. God is omnipotent, all-powerful. He has unlimited energy, therefore no limit of matter he can create.

The text continues by stating that living beings make the molecules themselves of which they are composed, p22. How were molecules formed before the living beings were formed? The text cites experiments where energy from lightning created molecules, which themselves became more complex molecules, DNA. This apparently happened for no reason. "These life components in the primitive soup were still in total disorder: there was only soup," p30. Supposedly, such molecules became more complex, and self-organized. The reproductive system would develop gradually during evolution. Many scientists think that reproduction is not as trivial as just stated. "They think that self-reproduction is the most important characteristic and that it should exist before any definite organization, p43. How do you do that? Strike up another one for God. Replenishing after one's kind is a major part of God's creation account.

Do you remember the commercial with the line, "Parts is parts?" When I was a young boy, as a future engineer, I was always scheming up some little invention and drawing "instruckshins." One time I made a 2-way radio. I stuck a nail in one end of a small box for an antenna, taped metallic bottle caps to the box for a microphone and a receiver, installed a battery, and ran wire from component to component. I showed it to my uncle. He said it would not work. He was right. I did not understand why not; I *installed* all the necessary *parts*.

DNA is the molecular set of instructions for our bodies, the "instruckshins" for our necessary parts. I think the origin of DNA is evolution's biggest problem to explain. It is, for them, a design for life that preceded life without a designer. "The problem of life is solved, therefore, if one has a beginning of duplication and a beginning of transcription," p49. "If" is a

big word in this sentence. Transcription is when DNA makes a change in its order so that ultimately offspring change.

DNA pair numbers have to match for fertilization to occur. If one animal becomes another, a new animal, it needs another changed one to mate with or there can be no reproduction. That is why people cannot mate with monkeys; the gene pairs do not match. With evolution, you have kinds that became other kinds with different numbers of gene pairs. Somehow mommy and daddy new kinds would have to occur together so they could mate and make more of the new kinds. How incredulous is that?

The conclusion of this textbook, p72, is entitled “The Question Remains Alive.” That is because evolution provides but a hollow answer, if an answer at all. From p72, “But why did life appear? Does life have a goal? These questions science cannot answer.” Only God has the answers to these questions, and they are revealed to us in His Holy Word.

## TEACHING ABOUT EVOLUTION (INSTRUCTIONAL TEXT)

Dr. Jonathan Sarfati, a creation scientist, has written a book, *Refuting Evolution*<sup>6</sup> that investigates the claims for evolution made by the National Academy of Sciences (USA). The NAS has compiled a book containing information for the purpose of helping teachers further indoctrinate students into the beliefs of evolution. This book is entitled *Teaching About Evolution and the Nature of Science*<sup>12</sup>.

Since we are questioning, “Can the Bible and Science Compromise,” let’s look at some quotes by prominent evolutionists taken from Dr. Sarfati’s book that counter-indicate compromise:

“Evolution (is) a theory universally accepted not because it can be proven by logically coherent evidence to be true, but because the only alternative, special creation, is clearly incredible,” p16, Professor D.M.S. Watson.

“We take the side of science in spite of the patent absurdity of some of its constructs, in spite of its failure to fulfill many of its extravagant promises...for we cannot allow a Divine Foot in the door,” pp17-18, Richard Lewontin.

Sadly, “As were many persons from Alabama, I was a born-again Christian. When I was fifteen, I entered the Southern Baptist Church with great fervor and interest in the fundamentalist religion; I left at seventeen when I got to the University of Alabama and heard about evolutionary theory,” pp19-20, E.O. Wilson. Another example of why I believe evolution is Satan’s greatest lie.

These few quotations were taken from chapter one of *Refuting Evolution*. I highly recommend this up-to-date critique of evolution to parents and students. It is important to know the facts ahead of time, in preparation for the day that a teacher or professor looks you in the eye and says, “There is no God.” What will you say?

## PENNSYLVANIA DEPARTMENT OF EDUCATION

There have been several recent newspaper articles on teaching evolution versus creation. One article was “Evolution vs. Creation: Some tackle it, some don’t”<sup>13</sup> by a staff reporter from

our local central Pennsylvania newspaper. The reporter interviewed local teachers. Many Pennsylvania teachers are concerned that wording of the proposed new science standards for public schools would allow religion in the class. The standard (i.e. guideline for teachers to follow) says teachers should “explain the mechanism of the theory of evolution” by analyzing “evidence of fossil records...that support *or do not support* the theory of evolution” (emphasis mine.) Some worry that the last part of this quote would allow scientific creationism in the class. God would never create a problem like this for Himself. The teachers interviewed in the article had differing viewpoints of how the issue should be handled, but the reporter’s conclusion was “the public school teachers said their decisions regarding crafting the science curriculum is largely based on state standards.”

It seemed for a while that creationists, Biblical or other, had a foot inside the door, through the tiniest crack. From the same newspaper came a promising article.<sup>14</sup> The true *religious zealots*, that is *the evolutionists*, were squawking. New Pennsylvania standards would allow students to analyze “evidence...that support(s) or do(es) not support the theory of evolution.” Some quotes from the article:

- It is very much a backdoor effort to let creationism be taught in the schools, and it is a clever one. Rob Boston, Americans United for Separation of Church and State.
- Education officials play down the criticism...(and) contend that teaching only evolution is orthodoxy unto itself. (Reporter.)
- Is evolution so delicate a flower that it must be protected? If it is, then there must be something wrong with it. Andrew Wert, Creation Science Fellowship.
- We are very troubled by the language (of the standards), which seems to permit creationism. Larry Frankel, ACLU.
- It is clear that the standards mandate the teaching of evolution. They also encourage schools to use the scientific method to explore other theories as well. Dan Langan, the (Pennsylvania) Department of Education.
- You cannot fully or completely present that aspect of science to a child without discussing creationism as an approach to answering questions of ‘Where did we come from?’ and ‘How did we get here?’ When state government wades into that particular issue and weighs in on the side of evolution to the neglect of creation, it is exhibiting an extreme bias. Rep. Samuel E. Rohrer, (PA) House Education Committee.

I was proud of my home state for handling the controversy this way; but this all changed a few months later. Roger D.K. Thomas, a professor at Franklin & Marshall College, said of the latter change, “We don’t want Pennsylvania to look as if we’re living in the Dark Ages.”<sup>15</sup>

## KANSAS BOARD OF EDUCATION

Recent years found the Kansas educational system in a controversy over the teaching of evolution and creation. For a year, the teaching standards in Kansas limited what of evolution could be taught; however, a new Kansas Board of Education indicated it would give approval to taking faith out of the classroom. This is a sad conclusion if it is indeed the conclusion.

At issue is the religion of evolution versus the religion of God and the Bible, pure and simple. Following is a coward's way out: "But Jack Krebs of Kansas Citizens for Science said the revisions would help *improve the state's tarnished image with scientists* by restoring mainstream standards on the history of the universe." <sup>16</sup> (Emphasis added.)

Mr. Krebs, I want as many people as possible to find the truth. Can you guarantee that you know the truth? Are you doing the right thing by withholding *all* good science and logic from your students? What are you afraid of, Mr. Krebs?

I sincerely believe that many who follow the religion of evolution will spend their eternity with countless scientists, who had theories, to whom Christ will say, "I do not know you." I do not know what Judgment Day will be like. Will God ask the lost if scientists can save them from the second death? Pride is the downfall of the soul.

## HAWAII STATE BOARD OF EDUCATION

It appears trendy in the new millennium to want to look good to the scientists. Wow, we used to act like they were nerds; now I do not feel so bad being an engineer. The state Board of Education in Hawaii has "unanimously rejected a proposal to require Hawaii public schools to teach biblical creationism in science classes." <sup>17</sup> Gareth Wynn-Williams of the University of Hawaii stated, "I hope and trust that the majority of the board has the wisdom to ensure that the state of Hawaii does not become the laughing stock of the scientific world."

## A "DELICATE FLOWER"

Evolutionists-- some knowingly-- have been teaching little white lies as evidence of evolution. One example is embryonic development. In 1874, Ernst Haeckel, a supporter of Charles Darwin, prepared diagrams showing embryos of several different species. All looked very similar. The claim was that they looked similar because the embryonic development of the different animals reflects their evolutionary history. The embryo drawings represented a fish, salamander, turtle, chicken, rabbit, and a human. The fraudulent sketches were deliberately misleading. The true forms of these embryos do not show the similarity that Haeckel was purporting<sup>18</sup>.

One of the most common incorrect lessons on evolution has been the teaching of the peppered moths of England. There was some related fraud to this, and the subject is known not to be of evolution at all, but is being taught perhaps unwittingly and in some classrooms at the present. The peppered moth came in mottled lighter and darker varieties, depending on the genes for melanin inherited from its parents. A light gray lichen encrusted certain trees in England. Darker moths were easier to see on the light lichen, so birds ate them more frequently than the light ones. Then the industrial revolution killed the lichen on the trees. The lighter colored moths then stuck out more than the dark, and the trend reversed. This was strictly variation within a kind, not evolution<sup>19</sup>.

Many animal kinds have genes allowing for a broad range of color. For example, there are brown horses and black horses, but that is not evolution. My father grew up on a farm. He told me that the white horses ate more than the brown horses. The only reason they could think

of for this was that they had more white horses than brown horses. Okay, that is a joke, but he did tell me that. Jeanne and I had horses, a sorrel and a chestnut. I can tell you that they both ate a lot. I hope God did slow the animals' digestion down a bit for Noah because the barn work was proportional to the amount the horses ate.

Sometimes evolutionists make honest mistakes. Most of us have heard of Brontosaurus, the largest dinosaur known during the time while I was a student. In 1997, I was shocked to find that there never was a Brontosaurus! At a creation science program, Dr. Gary Parker mentioned in passing that the paleontologists had made a mistake and put the wrong skull on the wrong skeleton. Where was the big retraction for that? Here is what one encyclopedia says: *Sauropods, which include giants such as Apatosaurus (formerly known as Brontosaurus) and Diplodocus, descended from prosauropods*<sup>8</sup>. I forgot about this until very recently. My two-year-old grandson, Drew, is very much into dinosaurs. He knows most of their names, but usually puts an extra "us" syllable at the end. He told his Aunt "Jo Jo" that a dinosaur was a particular name. Joanne said, "No, it's a Brontosaurus." She was taught evolution in school only a few years ago, so why was she taught about Brontosaurus?

## NEANDERTHAL VIDEO

I recently watched a television special program entitled *The Last Neanderthal*, about our supposed brutish ancestor. The production of this program was marvelous, but the content is flawed in interpretation. Someone who believes we evolved is forced to back his findings into an evolutionary timeframe of long ages. This also clouds the interpretation of the abilities of the ancient beings. That is, if a Neanderthal lived 250,000 years ago, he had to be very primitive to be connected with beliefs of onward and upward evolution. The Bible indicates the contrary. Our oldest ancestors of 6000 years ago built cities, musical instruments, and items of bronze, an alloy:

And Cain knew his wife; and she conceived, and bore Enoch: and he built a city...(Genesis 4:17)

And (Adah's) brother's name was Jubal: he was the father of all such as handle the harp and pipe. And (his brother) Tubalcain, an instructor of every craftsman in bronze and iron...(Genesis 4:21-22)

Some of the points of *The Last Neanderthal* and the creationist point or counterpoint are:

- *Neanderthals perhaps had complex language (The Last Neanderthal)*. There are only God's People, not Neanderthals, Cro-Magnons, Homo Africanus, etc. They all spoke from the day of the creation of Adam (author).
- *Neanderthals lived in Europe and the Middle East hundreds of thousands of years ago*. We agree with the location for early man. The long ages agree only with evolutionary theory, and are clearly contradicted by the Bible.
- *Lived in small groups. Cared for one another. Hunters/gatherers. Crude tools. Buried their dead*. Of course. First, we started from 2 people. We were families from the day

Adam and Eve had their first son. God gave us every herb for meat. We did not eat meat until after the flood. Winchester would not begin mass-producing rifles until thousands of years later.

- *Disappeared suddenly.* Several possibilities. Antediluvians were buried in the flood. Others scattered quickly after the confusion at Babel. Others picked up and moved from time to time.
- *Neanderthals had large bones, large brains, were muscular.* Compare Eskimos to Native Americans to Europeans to Asians. We are all one “race” (see chapter 9), but we can be built differently. Sit on a bench at a mall sometime and watch the shoppers walk by. Look at their skull shapes. You see all different shapes; maybe some even a bit like a “typical Neanderthal.”
- *A new “predecessor,” Cro Magnon, was found in France. His skull was different than Neanderthal, he was taller, lighter boned, ate a better diet, made jewelry.* I am fairly average-everything. There are thousands of a breed called “professional athlete” that are taller than me, weigh more, have a better diet, and have more jewelry. We cohabitate in the USA. The video says Neanderthal and Cro Magnon might have cohabitated in the Middle East.
- *A second group came “out-of-Africa” and either 1. displaced all others including Neanderthal, or 2. Mixed and merged with the others.* Perhaps Noah’s family re-populating the earth.

## WALKING WITH DINOSAURS (VIDEO)

This video also was very well done in terms of production. My grandsons loved it. The dinosaurs were so realistic and colorful. The production was put in terms of a narrative that required a story and some assumptions. What they came up with was amazing. My comments are as follows:

- *An asteroid 25 million years ago ended the dinosaur age including colossal sea monsters and flying reptiles (Walking with Dinosaurs).* Naturalists have not been able to determine why the dinosaurs are all gone. They look to a catastrophic answer, and this is their leading current theory. There are many extinct animals. After the Noahic Flood, the animals that disembarked on the dry ground were on a new earth. Many creatures were in disfavor by the new climactic conditions (author).
- *Hundreds of Coelophysis were found drowned from a flash flood or were stuck in a mud trap at Ghost Ranch in New Mexico.* How about a Biblical flood?
- *Since dinosaurs are the ancestors of fish, amphibians, and reptiles, and the descendants of dinosaurs, the birds, all use color and see color, it is a logical conclusion that dinosaurs could see in color and made use of color.* Talk about a theory inside a theory inside a theory! A PhD stated this dogmatically, which is presumptuous when evolution is only a theory. Another PhD admitted, “all they have are bones and stones, and then they have to speculate.”
- *Diplodocus makes seasonal migrations. A mile-long colony of Iguanadons is shown migrating north.* Another scientist says he found many Iguanadon tracks in one location.

He thinks they were migrating because all the tracks went in one direction. For a proper study or speculation, hundreds or thousands of such sets of tracks would have to be found to make a reasonable assumption like that. If you had only ever watched one pitch of a baseball game, you could say, "Yeah, I saw baseball. One guy throws the ball and one guy with a wooden stick watches a guy behind him catch it." So, like one pitch not telling the whole story of baseball, one set of tracks does not necessarily point to migration.

- *After 160 million years the reign of dinosaurs is about to end. In the Gulf of Mexico, an asteroid 2 miles in diameter plunges to earth. Now comes a tidal wave of smoke and dust that will darken the skies for years to come. In its wake, a hale of molten rocks and ash, followed by a catastrophic change in climate. (Fade to black).* Why did something that bad only kill the dinosaurs? Why not just the big ones? Why the sea creatures, too? Why not everything? Maybe there was a worldwide flood. No, scientists could never buy a worldwide flood. It must be a big asteroid! Wait, does the Bible say anything about an asteroid? If so, something else is needed.

Is there a Y2K theory of why the dinosaurs all died? Of course. Before the tectonic plates had traveled more than 10% of the entire amount that they would eventually shift, the earth's climate began to change. Fearing the worst, dinosaurs assembled and devised a plan to construct Stonehenge. The arrangement of the giant stones focused the sun's rays on an obelisk made of polished diamond. Dinosaurs, being what they are, failed to account for the sun's harmful rays being redirected by the obelisk right back at the sun, thus blinding itself. The sun took ill and did not shine for the longest time, changing the climate temporarily. Thus, the dinosaur's days were ended, but the remainder of ~~creation~~ evolution was able to return. (You will not find this account in the Bible.)

#### COMPROMISE: DOES THAT MEAN THE BIBLE IS WRONG?

Do scientists think they are ahead of the Bible? "No, no the Bible is wrong. It is archaic material written long ago by people that barely understood fire." Oh, yeah?

- *The Bible says there was a worldwide flood.* The fossil record shows evidence of a worldwide flood.
- *The Bible says the world is round. It is he that sitteth upon the circle of the earth, and the inhabitants thereof are as grasshoppers; that stretcheth out the heavens as a curtain, and spreadeth them out as a tent to dwell in: (Isaiah 40:22).* The scientists one day discovered the world is round. Remember, before that, scientists thought the world was flat!
- *The earth is hanging in space. He stretcheth out the north over the empty place, and hangeth the earth upon nothing. (Job 26:7).* Scientists first believed that Atlas carried the world upon his shoulders. The earth is hanging upon nothing.
- *All of us are descendents of one woman, Eve.* Scientists are now turning this way, that there was an "Eve," in their "Out of Africa" postulation.

- *The Bible says the earth was divided in the days of Peleg.* The earth was divided. This could refer to continental drift, the shifting of the tectonic plates.

## HYBRIDS

Some animals can “cross breed,” resulting in sterile offspring. That is, both parents are the same “kind” (comp. Gen. 1) but not the same breed or type. For example, a horse and a donkey are both equine, but, well, one is a horse and the other a donkey. They probably descended from the same Biblical “kind.” After many years of isolation, two separate breeds were established. Their genes line up well enough to reproduce, but their offspring cannot mate. A horse and a donkey cross breed to produce a mule. This is a profitable union, as a mule has desirable traits inherited from the breeds of both parents.

Hybrids are good evidence that there may have been far fewer “kinds” aboard Noah’s ark than one would think. Likewise, fewer at creation. We might wonder why there were so many different animals ages ago that no longer are here, such as dinosaurs. We might ask why God would create in this fashion. Did He not know about the ones that would go extinct? Of course He did.

We must remember that our planet has gone through many stages of which God had foreknowledge. There was the earth before first sin (how lush that must have been). After man was cast from Eden, the earth continued to be in a global greenhouse effect until “the windows of heaven opened,” contributing to Noah’s flood. After the flood there were drastic changes including an ice age, followed by the world as we know it today.

Other examples of hybrid animals are crosses between lions and tigers, bobcats and housecats, coyotes and dogs, and horses and zebras. The mule by far is the most useful hybrid. Other useful hybrids include some cattle, pigs, and certain chickens.

## QUESTIONS AND THEORIES ABOUT CREATION

- **SIX DAYS-** Why did it take so long? God is all knowing and all-powerful. He could have made it all in one day. Or could He? What is a day? There was no time before creation. God had to create time. Maybe it was harder to create “time” than to create what He created.
- **A DAY IS AS A THOUSAND YEARS-** Before the year 2000, the doomsayers were quite vocal, like a witch on Halloween. I remember hearing many times; “The Lord said I will arise on the third day. The Bible says in II Peter 3:8 that with the Lord a day is as a thousand years. Now that we are turning to the third thousand years, or the third day, Jesus will return. Are you ready?” I am very glad that these worriers got some people to think about salvation, but they missed the point on the thousand years. This verse merely means that God is outside of time.
- **A DAY IS AS A THOUSAND YEARS, LET’S TRY IT AGAIN-** “Since science has proven evolution, therefore God couldn’t have created in 6 ordinary days, then he did it in 6,000 years. Ah, that fits better.” No, God did not say that. I wonder if there was ever a time in history that more people called God a liar than do nowadays. Think of the scariest

conflict you have experienced with authority. A 6'-4" cop, in a bad mood, on a bad day tells you he clocked you 15 mph over the speed limit. Exactly how are you planning to call him "a no good lying dirty stupid ##&?" Think it through again with God. Are you calling God a liar?

- THEISTIC EVOLUTION- This is a compromise where Christians say, "God created everything, and evolution is how He did it." This still calls God a hoax on the 6-day deal. It also means that there was death before sin (evolution requires struggle-and-death, struggle-and-death). It also makes God erroneous on the sin thing, which would screw up the salvation thing.
- GAP THEORY- Another way to get around the six days and young earth is the Gap Theory. This theory places millions of years in between the first two verses of the Bible, with Lucifer at the helm. Lucifer rebels, God wipes everything out with "Lucifer's Flood," God recreates (it means death before Adam's sin again), says everything is very good (including Lucifer at that time)- it does not work. Do you see a trend here? The only way that works is the way God said. He must be smart!
- STARLIGHT- If the earth is young and the stars are billions of light years away, why can we see the light from these stars? It should not be here yet. Did you see "*Back to the Future?*" In the words of the professor, "You're not thinking fourth dimensionally." God made the stars. God made the light. Do you think it would occur to Him to make the light beams in place?
- HOW ABOUT A FLOOD?- My favorite paleontologist is Dr. Gary Parker. An expression he uses a lot after laying out fossil evidence and asking, "What would do this," is "How about a flood?" Of course the entire fossil record just screams out "Noahic Flood." The fossil record could be the best evidence for the historicity of the Bible, and against evolution.
- HOW ABOUT AN ICE AGE?- The natural occurrence after the flood was an ice age, and there definitely was one. There are theories involving different scenarios, but the simplest to me seems the most likely. Prior to Noah's Flood, there was a canopy of waters above the firmament that created a greenhouse effect around the earth. During the torrents, this canopy was depleted. Suddenly the earth was covered with water. The poles became sub-zero. Ice Age.
- IF I WERE THE BOSS- I guess my sense of humor would have me do some things differently. Like the platypus. I would have made more animals like the platypus to mess with the evolutionists. I would have put toe tags on the animals buried in the flood with patent numbers and dates. I would have buried a woolly mammoth with a WWJD license plate.

## THE NICE THING ABOUT GOD

If I could only *prove* God exists! The frustration is that all the proof is there. Those that do not believe do not because they do not want to. Did you ever see the chart that shows mountains, lowlands, streams, rivers, and oceans? Clouds are drawn above the mountains, raining upon them, with the liquid of life flowing to these bodies of water. The water in the ocean evaporates, forms clouds, and moves to the mountains to renew the cycle. It is the elusive

perpetual motion machine. I see that as God's way to distribute the only element as important as air all over the world to everywhere it is needed. I suppose an evolutionist thinks we just got lucky, because he does not want to find God. One more fact about water- possibly the only place in the cosmos that water exists in liquid form is on earth.

I watched a television program a few times called *Touched by an Angel*. If you like to cry tears of joy, watch it. I saw an episode about parents who did not believe in God, and a teenage daughter who was looking for God. The father was a science teacher. The daughter tried to prove God. She eventually saw her mistake and announced that while gazing at the stars, she had an overwhelming urge to be thankful. She felt that this urge could only be because there is someone to thank- God. The parents came to believe in God in the short timeframe of the program. The family was huddled at the end, the mother dying of cancer, and one angel asked another, "How long do they have together?" The second angel replied, "Forever."

Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created. (Revelation 4:11.)

#### A CALL TO PARENTS

<sup>13</sup>And they brought young children to him, that he should touch them: and his disciples rebuked those that brought them. <sup>14</sup>But when Jesus saw it, he was much displeased, and said unto them, Suffer the little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God. <sup>15</sup>Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, he shall not enter therein. <sup>16</sup>And he took them up in his arms, put his hands upon them, and blessed them. (Mark 10:13-16)

I have been all fired-up about fighting the evolutionistic thinkers in court, proving the scientists wrong with factual science of our own, and whatever else would help us get children to hear about the Biblical creation facts. It took an elementary school student to show me the way. A youngster came into my wife's library class very excited about a book she wanted to share with her classmates. She asked Jeanne to read it to them. The book had wonderful stories of dinosaurs in the Garden of Eden and on the ark with Noah.

This book, *The Great Dinosaur Mystery and the Bible*, by Paul S. Taylor, and others like it are a big part of the answer to my cause. If we teach our children that Biblical creation is a "faith the facts fit," it will be much easier for them to hold onto the doctrines of Genesis as they mature. Satan's method is to chip away at the foundations of faith, let us chip away at the foundation of his lies.

Unfortunately, Jeanne could not read the book to the class because of school policy pertaining to religious materials. The child allowed Jeanne to bring the book home to read to our pre-school age granddaughter, Mariah. She enjoyed the book immensely. (Please see Recommended Reading for Children for information on this.)

## A CALL TO ALL

This section has been enjoyable to research and write. There is something else that was written a long time ago that is more right than what I could write, and much more important. In creation versus evolution, we seek the truth in where we came from. We believe the one who was there. When you seek: *But seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you.* (Matthew 6:33)

Christ died on the cross for our sins. Our sins. Yours. Mine. Salvation is not set-aside for “good” people. If it were, Heaven would be empty. Jesus shared Calvary with two thieves. Do you know the fate of the thieves? <sup>39</sup>*And one of the (thieves) which were hanged railed on him, saying, If thou be Christ, save thyself and us.* <sup>40</sup>*But the other answering rebuked him, saying, Dost not thou fear God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation?* <sup>41</sup>*And we indeed justly; for we receive the due reward of our deeds: but this man hath done nothing amiss.* <sup>42</sup>*And he said unto Jesus, Lord, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdom.* <sup>43</sup>*And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, To day shalt thou be with me in paradise.* (Luke 23:39-43). One thief was saved, because he believed in the Lord Jesus Christ. None should despair. The other was not saved. None should be presumptuous. The thief that did not repent looked upon the Savior’s face. Someday, Jesus will not know him: <sup>22</sup>*Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord,* <sup>23</sup>*And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity.* (Matthew 7:22a-23)

Do not make that same error. Jesus came unto the Jews as their promised Messiah. He was not the Messiah they wanted. He came as the Redeemer, as promised, but not as the conqueror, as He will return later. John 1:11 says that He came unto His own (the Jews), and His own received Him not. Do not make that mistake. Simply pray, “Dear Heavenly Father, I know I am a sinner, just like the thief on the cross. I know that your Son Jesus died for my sins, too. Jesus, please come into my heart and be my Savior. Please guide my daily life, I give it to You. In Your Holy Name. Amen.”

## PART II WHAT DOES GOD SAY ABOUT HOW WE LIVE?



Now these Jews were more noble than those in Thessalonica, for they received the word with all eagerness, examining the scriptures daily to see if these things were so. Acts 17:11  
RSV

## Chapter 4. Does it Matter What We Believe?



**“Are we to believe that God created other people in order to condemn them?”** Sister Joan Chittister<sup>20</sup>

*Know therefore that the Lord thy God, He is God, the faithful God, which keepeth covenant and mercy with them that love Him and keep His commandments to a thousand generations;*  
(Deuteronomy 7:9)

When I was a young boy about 5 years old, I remember thinking; “God wouldn’t send the ‘heathen’ Africans to hell when they die. They do not know about Jesus. They have not had a chance to invite Jesus into their hearts to be their Savior. I connect this memory along with a vivid recollection of Sunday school at a time when my mother was my Sunday school teacher and Mae Gingerich played the piano. This unfortunate view of other cultures was not taught to me in Sunday school, nor was it a racial view, but literally because of what I saw on TV in the 1950’s, including on Tarzan movies.

Sister Joan Chittister, quoted above, is a brilliant woman. We have in common that we are Penn State University alumni, she a distinguished alumna. We both are concerned with the spiritual, and the spiritual fate of others. I will stop there because Sister Joan’s honors go on-and-on. I stop at Brother. (I have a sister Jane and brother Fred. I am their brother.)

At one time I agreed with Sister Joan on the issue of the non-Christian that knew nothing of the true God. I certainly do believe in an eternal Heaven and an eternal, literal hell. I do not wish anyone to be anywhere but in Heaven for the hereafter. But now my thoughts on one’s

eternal fate have changed; I believe it *is* fair for the heathen to be damned, just as it is fair for any non-believer to be damned. In fact it is fair for the believer to be damned, but for the grace of God. Jesus said, “He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches;” (Revelation 2:7a). “Everyone” in the Christian world is familiar with the evangelical message. Most have made light of it.

My writing desk is located at a window at the front of the house. I have a lovely view out, and I suppose there is a lovely view in. I suppose after the preceding paragraphs it would be wise to install bulletproof glass. Before the shooting starts, let me tell you why I say a poor heathen, who never heard of God, Jesus, and salvation, and who has suffered through disease and poverty, would deserve such eternal punishment. I say the answer is in the first book of the Bible. I further say there is no good reason why there are people blind to God.

He hath remembered His covenant forever, the word which He commanded to a thousand generations. (Psalms 105:8)

God created everything, including the first man and woman. The first man and woman gave rise to *all* civilization. At one time *all* of civilization was very aware of the Creator God. Because of sin and failure to obey God, the people of the world became very corrupt. Noah found grace in the eyes of God. God destroyed all of the living creatures except those taken aboard the ark. All of Noah’s family knew God. All of today’s heathens are descendents of Noah’s family. Therefore, all heathens are descendents of Noah, who knew God, and chose to reject God and worship whatever else they wanted to worship.

Using the Word of God as the measuring stick (as it is God who established the rules in the first place) anyone lost has no excuse.

<sup>18</sup>But God shows his anger from heaven against all sinful, evil men who push away the truth from them. <sup>19</sup>For the truth about God is known to them instinctively; God has put this knowledge in their hearts. <sup>20</sup>Since earliest times men have seen the earth and sky and all God made, and have known of his existence and great eternal power. So they will have no excuse [when they stand before God at Judgment Day]. (Romans 1:18-20)

Buddhist, your ancestor Noah knew the living God. You rejected him. Muslim, you ignored that Jesus is Lord; he is not a prophet. Mormon, God’s Word was concluded with the Revelation of Jesus Christ- you are a cult. Jehovah’s Witness, Christian Scientist, Jesus is God. God is just; there is only one way:

If we believe not, yet he abideth faithful: he cannot deny himself. (II Timothy 2:13)

<sup>89</sup>For ever, O Lord, thy word is settled in heaven. <sup>90</sup>Thy faithfulness is unto all generations: thou hast established the earth, and it abideth. <sup>160</sup> Thy word is true from the beginning: and every one of thy righteous judgments endureth for ever. (Psalms 119:89,90,160)

## WHAT ARE THE MAJOR WORLD RELIGIONS?

Roman Catholic	1,042,501,000
Protestant	382,374,000
Orthodox	173,560,000
Anglican	75,847,000
<b>TOTAL CHRISTIANITY</b>	<b>1,674,282,000</b>
<b>JUDAISM</b>	<b>18,153,000</b>
<b>TOTAL ISLAM AND BAHA'I</b>	<b>1,020,114,000</b>
Hindu	751,360,000
Buddhist	334,002,000
Traditional Chinese	140,956,000
Sikhism	19,853,000
Shamanism	10,854,000
Confucianism	6,230,000
Jainism	3,927,000
Shinto's	3,336,000
<b>TOTAL EASTERN</b>	<b>1,270,508,000</b>
Other "Christianity"	195,470,000
Tribal Religions	99,736,000
Other and new religions	142,948,000
<b>TOTAL OTHER</b>	<b>438,154,000</b>
Non-religious	912,874,000
Atheist	241,852,000
<b>TOTAL NON/NO GOD</b>	<b>1,154,726,000</b>
<b>GRAND TOTAL</b>	<b>5,575,947,000</b>

Rhetorical question: how did 20% of us worldwide lose faith that there is a God, when 100% of the first people on earth, Adam and Eve, knew there was a living God? And then 100% again when Noah's family disembarked from the ark, knowing firsthand that there was (is) a living God? Thirty percent (30%) of us "kept the faith," that is, are Jewish or mainstream Christian. So added together with the non-religious and atheists that leaves 50%. Even in Moses' day some only kept the faith long enough until someone else built a golden calf, so what did the other 50% of the world come up with? That is, the 50% that Sister Joan thinks that God should not condemn.

All of the following religions' descriptions are excerpts from *Compton's Interactive Encyclopedia*.<sup>8</sup>

Mormons. Mormon teaching states that God had originally evolved from mankind. Therefore present humanity could become gods. Contrary to Christianity, Mormon belief asserts that the three persons of the Godhead are three separate beings. Jesus Christ appeared on Earth to save mankind, but each person's salvation depends on the quality of his own life. A baptism by immersion is practiced, and there is also a baptism on behalf of the dead. Mormons believe it is possible for dead ancestors to participate in salvation.

Jehovah's Witnesses hold beliefs that differ markedly from those in traditional Christian denominations. They believe in a God, Jehovah, who sent Jesus Christ to Earth to make it possible for mankind to obtain eternal life. The divinity of Jesus is denied, as is the existence of the Holy Spirit as a separate person of the Trinity. By the late 1980s the Witnesses had more than 3,700,000 members worldwide and were doing work in more than 200 countries and territories.

Seventh-Day Adventists. The Old and New Testaments of the Bible both foretell the advent (coming) of a Savior, or Messiah. When He appears, as an agent of God, the wicked will be punished and a new Heaven and Earth created. This expectation is called Adventism. In a sense, all Jews and Christians are Adventists. But they disagree on whether Jesus Christ was the Messiah that was promised in the Old Testament. Seventh-Day Adventists believe in the second coming of Christ, baptism by immersion, and observing the seventh day (Saturday) as Sabbath. Originated about 1844; expenses of ministry are met by a tithing system. They have extensive foreign missions.

Christian Science accepts many of the basic doctrines of Christianity, including belief in one God, the authority of the Bible, and the life and ministry of Jesus Christ. It departs from traditional Christianity in regarding Jesus primarily as an example of the divine son ship of God that is present in all humanity. It also denies that God created the world of matter. Matter is viewed instead as a perception. Reality--life, will, and mind--is spiritual. Hence the illnesses and misfortunes of the flesh are problems that are related only to the material aspect of life. Christian redemption is a rebirth out of the physical into the spiritual, from the material into the real. This is a lifelong process: Christian Science has a full-time healing ministry engaged in by people called practitioners. The curing of disease through prayer is regarded as a necessary element in salvation. Followers are not compelled by the church to use spiritual healing.

Islam. In the year 610, the first of many revelations came to Muhammad from God by way of the angel Gabriel. The message Muhammad received told him that there was but one God, not many gods, as most Arabs believed. This God was creator of the world, and He would one day judge mankind. Judaism and Christianity were already spreading the idea of one God. Muhammad saw his task, therefore, not as something new, but as a continuation and conclusion. He was the last in a succession of prophets stretching from Adam, Abraham, Moses, and Elijah, to Jesus who proclaimed the oneness of God, or Allah. But Islam was never incorporated into either Judaism or Christianity. It became a new religion and a new civilization as well. The revelations that Muhammad received were collected into the Koran. Islam teaches that there is one God, the creator and sustainer of the universe. This God, Allah, is compassionate and just. Because He is compassionate, He calls all people to believe in Him and worship Him. Because He is also just,

on the Last Day He will judge every person according to his deeds. On the Last Day, all the dead will be resurrected and either rewarded with Heaven or punished with hell. God has sent prophets to communicate His will. These prophets, all mortal men, were elected messengers to whom God spoke through an angel or by inspiration. The life of each Muslim is always within the community of the faithful: All are declared "brothers to each other," with the mission to "enjoin good and forbid evil." Within the community, Muslims are expected to establish social and economic justice. They are also expected to carry their message out to the rest of the world. In the early Islamic community, this meant the use of force in the form of jihad, or holy war to gain political control over societies and run them in accordance with the principles of Islam. During the decades following the death of Muhammad certain essential principles were singled out from his teachings. These have come to be called the five pillars of Islam: the basic creed, prayer, pilgrimage, fasting, and the charitable contribution.

Hinduism is the major religion of the Indian subcontinent. It dates back more than 3,000 years. More than 90 percent of the world's Hindus live in India. Significant (populations) may be found in Pakistan and Sri Lanka, and smaller numbers live in Myanmar, South Africa, Trinidad, Europe, and the United States. Hinduism is unlike any other religion. It is difficult to define with any precision. Its origins are lost in a very distant past. It does not have one holy book but several. There is no single body of doctrine. Instead there is a great diversity of belief and practice. There are many sects, cults, theologies, and schools of philosophy, and all of them find a home within Hinduism. It is a religion that worships many gods. Yet it also adheres to the view that there is only one God, called Brahman. All other divinities are aspects of the one absolute and unknowable Brahman. Another feature of Hinduism is belief in reincarnation. Associated with this belief is the conviction that all living things are part of the same essence. Individuals pass through cycles of birth and death. This means that an individual soul may return many times in human, animal, or even vegetable form. What a person does in the present life will affect the next life.

Buddhism The religion of about one eighth of the world's people, Buddhism is the name for a system of beliefs developed around the teachings of a single man. The Buddha, whose name was Siddhartha Gautama, lived 2,500 years ago in India. There is no one single "bible" of Buddhism, but all Buddhists share some basic beliefs. Buddha means "the Awakened or Enlightened One," and all Buddhist teachings try to share the Buddha's experience of awakening to truth. Having led an indulgent life as a young man, Siddhartha Gautama decided to pursue a course of bitter self-denial. Yet he felt that this brought him no closer to the truth he sought than the rich life he had led. One day he felt close to reaching his truth, and he sat down under a tree now known as the Bo tree. There he attained the bliss and knowledge he had been seeking. The Buddha wanted to make his inspiration about the nature of life available to others for their betterment. He worked his experience into a doctrine known as the Four Noble Truths, the basis of all schools of Buddhism. The Buddha taught for almost 50 years after his Enlightenment. He did not write a word of his teachings. No one during his lifetime put anything he said in writing. His original teachings were handed down from one generation to the next by word of mouth.

Sikhism The Punjab region of northern India is home to Sikhism. The word Sikh means "disciple." Adherents consider themselves disciples of the founder, Guru Nanak, and his nine

successors (guru means "teacher"). Roots of the movement he founded were in the Hindu cult of devotion to Vishnu and in the practices of the Muslim mystics called Sufis. Nanak taught that there is one God who is creator of the world. This God is completely unknowable except to those who can perceive Him in His creation. Such perception can only come to those who reject loyalty to the world and its values. Nanak laid out a path to salvation that was a simple devotional discipline of meditation. The goal was release from the cycle of birth and death. This cycle refers to Nanak's doctrine of reincarnation: the soul is born many times into the world before it is finally released to find unity with God.

Shamanism, religion of the Ural-Altaic peoples living from Bering Strait to borders of Scandinavia; found in varied forms among Eskimos and American Indians; based on belief that good and evil come from ancestral spirits, gods, and demons that can be influenced by the priest or medicine man (shaman).

Confucianism For more than 2,000 years the Chinese people have been guided by the ideals of Confucianism. Its founder and greatest teacher was Confucius, whose humane philosophy also influenced the civilization of all of eastern Asia. With teaching and with wise sayings, Confucius tried to bring people to a virtuous way of life and a respect for the teachings of the wise men of older generations. He always said of himself that he was a "transmitter, not a maker." He collected and edited the poetry, the music, and the historical writings of what he considered the golden age. Confucius laid no claim to being more than a man. Yet when he died he was revered almost as a god. Temples were erected in his honor in every city of China. His grave at Kufow became a place of pilgrimage.

Jainism is one of the major religions that developed within the ancient civilization of India. The name of the religion derives from the term Jina, meaning "victor" or "conqueror." The goal of Jainism is the spiritual progress of the individual through a succession of stages until he is able to conquer and renounce dependence on the world and the self. Thereby the individual is freed from all contamination by the material world. Followers of Jainism believe that the world, space, and time are eternal and uncreated. There is a center containing a region of souls in which all living things--people, animals, gods, and devils--exist. Below this region is a series of hells--places of punishment and torture, and above the region are levels of heavens and celestial areas in which souls live once they are liberated from bodies. All reality in the universe is divided into two parts: living substances called souls and nonliving substances. The soul possesses unlimited perception, knowledge, happiness, and power. But once a soul is entrapped in matter--such as the human body--these faculties are limited by location in space, contaminated by the senses, and subject to the chain of cause and effect, birth and death. The means of liberation for the soul is yoga, a discipline of self-control and meditation. The chief concept that guides behavior in Jainism is ahimsa, the principle of nonviolence and non-injury toward all living things. This principle has led to a belief in the equality of all souls and to the freedom to associate with anyone.

Shintoism Shinto seems to be as old as the Japanese people and nation. Shinto is a loose system of beliefs and attitudes held by most Japanese about themselves, their families and clans, and their ruling powers. The word itself means "the way of *kami*," and while there is no precise

English equivalent, *kami* refer to superior powers, either natural or divine, which are revered by followers of Shinto. The *kami* can be neither known nor explained, but they are believed to be the source of human life and existence. The *kami* reveal truth to people and give them guidance to live in accordance with it. Shinto does not have regular weekly services. Devotees may visit the shrines any time they want to. There are several festivals during the year that bring believers together for varying purposes. Some festivals celebrate the events of an individual's life from birth to old age. Shinto has no known founder, nor are there *sacred* books. Its two chief books are 'Records of Ancient Matters' and 'Chronicles of Japan', written in 712 and 720 respectively. They are compilations of the ancient oral tradition of Shinto, but they deal as well with other historical topics. The core of the mythology centers on the Sun goddess, Amaterasu O-mikami, whose descendants unified Japan under the authority of the first emperor, Jimmu Tenno.

## NON-LITERAL GENESIS POSITION

If one believes we evolved, if one believes there was not a literal flood or at least not a worldwide flood, then one might say the heathens never had a chance of knowing God. I believe this is a paragraph of nonsensical “if’s,” because I believe the evidence supports a literal Genesis, literal 6-day Biblical creation, literal flood, literal Jesus, literal crucifixion, literal resurrection, literal plan of salvation, literal Heaven, hell, and eternity. To say that these beliefs are very important is an understatement. It is possible that a misunderstanding of the first book of the Bible could lead to an incorrect decision affecting one’s eternal fate. Please, make the right choice for your eternity.

The preceding descriptions did not include Judaism because I only listed cults. This book without a doubt is written from a Christian bias. The Jews are God’s chosen people, and of course are not a cult. Christians must recognize that in a way Christianity is a natural extension of Judaism from the arrival and ministry of the Messiah.

<sup>19</sup>Dearly beloved, avenge not yourselves, but rather give place unto wrath: for it is written, Vengeance is mine; I will repay, saith the Lord. <sup>20</sup>Therefore if thine enemy hunger, feed him; if he thirst, give him drink: for in so doing thou shalt heap coals of fire on his head. <sup>21</sup>Be not overcome of evil, but overcome evil with good. (Romans 12:19-21)

Skinheads and militants, I do not have my bulletproof glass in yet, but my insurance is paid up. You cowards despise God’s Chosen People. Do you think Jesus was a Davidian? Who are the Old Testament heroes? Who loved the Lord our God? Who were the first Christians? And who was Peter, the rock on whom Christ built the Church. The mightiest witnesses ever to walk the earth will be 144,000 Jews (Revelation 7), and they will have to accomplish this during the Tribulation! You are trying to use the Son of God as an excuse to hate His creation. The Jews are our friends, they are God’s friends, and Jesus came first unto His own. We are to take them a message of Christ, love, and salvation, not of hate!

I would like to address one other item about Jews at this point. A new park in Florida modeled after the Holy Land has recently opened. Sadly, it is perceived negatively by some Jews as a mechanism designed for converting Jews to Christianity. What is sadder is that Christians

and other Gentiles have persecuted Jews so horrifically that there is no room for trust. I do not know how we correct this, but dropping hatred never hurt anyone. Consider this, Christian; we believe that the Holy Spirit convicts us unto our beliefs in accepting Christ as Savior. What if we hate others, and as stumbling blocks keep them from giving their hearts to Christ?

## PROVE THE EXISTENCE OF GOD, AND I WILL BELIEVE

A man I have known for about 25 years has a biology background. He has been asking me many questions about my book. I could not tell you how many times he has asked, “When can I read it?” His interest has been encouraging. Yesterday the truth was revealed.

For the first time, He came right out and told me that evolution is scientific “fact”; it is not a theory (as even the scientists admit). He said that the world is old (billions of years); but, if I can show him one fossil found out of place, he will believe in creation. These words would sound familiar to Ken Ham.

I truly think he is looking for God, but he admits his present doubts that there is a God. I will show him the written fossil evidence he wants. I have previously given him information showing the weakness of evolutionary theory. The sad part is, he will not believe.

<sup>24</sup>And some believed the things which were spoken, and some believed not. <sup>25a</sup>And when they agreed not among themselves, they departed...<sup>26</sup>Saying, Go unto this people, and say, Hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and not perceive: <sup>27</sup>For the heart of this people is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes have they closed; lest they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them. <sup>28</sup>Be it known therefore unto you, that the salvation of God is sent unto the Gentiles, and that they will hear it. (Acts 28:24-28)

I guarantee that he will not believe the evidence. He will see, yet not see. He has already heard, but not heard. Even if he does believe the evidence, he will say it is because pressure from the ice age turned the rock layers upside down, or something to that effect, and at any rate will not believe in God. You cannot prove the existence of God to someone who does not believe in God “even if they drag (the ark) down Main Street.”

And the Pharisees came forth, and began to question with him, seeking of him a sign from Heaven, tempting him. And he sighed deeply in his spirit, and saith, Why doth this generation seek after a sign? verily I say unto you, There shall no sign be given unto this generation. (Mark 8:11-12)

And Jesus said unto them, I am the bread of life: he that cometh to me shall never hunger; and he that believeth on me shall never thirst. But I said unto you, That ye also have seen me, and believe not. (John 6:35-36)

For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears; And they shall turn

away their ears from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables. But watch thou in all things, endure afflictions, do the work of an evangelist, make full proof of thy ministry. (2 Timothy 4:3-5)

## IS IT ENOUGH JUST TO BELIEVE SOMETHING?

<sup>16</sup>For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. <sup>17</sup>For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved. <sup>18</sup>He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God. (John 3:16-18)

I spoke to a friend's mother years ago about Christ and salvation. She is now deceased. At the time when I spoke to her she represented herself as a Protestant. I do not recall exactly what started our conversation on religion. I do remember that I told her my viewpoint of sin, the cross, and a personal relationship with Jesus. Her opinion was that you could go to Heaven if you "just believed something." Unfortunately for persons with that or similar attitudes, the decision on such an issue is not ours.

By definition, a Christian must believe the Bible. The Bible does not list multiple routes to Heaven. It lists one. *Enter ye in at the strait gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat: Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it. (Matthew 7:13-14).* As a youth I had a good friend whose father was "set in his ways." My friend told me, "Dad thinks there are two ways of doing things; his way and the wrong way." That is somewhat how it is with God, but not exactly.

God is omniscient, Just, and Holy. There is only *one* way to Heaven- His way. He cannot allow more than one way to Heaven, unless you consider those who die at the age of innocence as going a separate way.

When I was 10 or 11 years of age I witnessed to my 80 year-old grandfather. I remember crying because he would not accept what I was telling him. He told me that God is a God of love, and would not send us to hell (I imagine he drew a line with "bad" people, but I do not recall). God loves us all, which is true. Again, He is a just God, a pure God who can be no less than holy. Therefore, the only logical conclusion is what the Bible tells us. *Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me. (John 14:6).* Salvation through God's Son is the only means to God revealed to us in His Word.

## DEATH ROW OPINION

I followed a television series on the History Channel about American prisons. One program was about Angola Prison in Louisiana, a remarkably tough institution. One of the prisoners profiled was a convicted murderer on death row. The correspondent asked him if he were spiritually ready to die. The inmate was not sure. He was asked if he believed in an

afterlife, and if so, how did he think one could gain admittance to Heaven. The prisoner stated that he believed in God, and an afterlife, but he was not certain how to get to Heaven. I believe his response was, "I don't know, to be as Christ-like as possible, I guess."

He had already been executed by the time the program aired. That saddened me, not because of his death per se, but because his answer on how to get to Heaven is wrong. It is impossible to be Christ-like. We cannot be God, nor can we die for the remission of sins.

WELL, WHAT ARE WE TO BELIEVE AND DO?

The following scripture speaks for itself:

Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy might. (Deuteronomy 6:5).

Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved, and thy house. (Acts 16:31).

<sup>1</sup>Children, obey your parents in the Lord: for this is right.

<sup>2</sup>Honour thy father and mother;

<sup>4</sup>And, ye fathers, provoke not your children to wrath: but bring them up in the nurture and admonition of the Lord.

<sup>5</sup>Servants, be obedient to...your masters according to the flesh, with fear and trembling, in singleness of your heart, as unto Christ;...<sup>7</sup>With good will doing service, as to the Lord, and not to men:

<sup>9</sup>And, ye masters, do the same things unto them, forbearing threatening: knowing that your Master also is in heaven; neither is there respect of persons with him.

<sup>10</sup>Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might. <sup>11</sup>Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. (Ephesians 6:1-11)

Study to shew thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth. (2 Timothy 2:15).

Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. (Matthew 4:4).

Love ye your enemies, and do good, and lend, hoping for nothing again; and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be the children of the Highest: for he is kind unto the unthankful and to the evil. Be ye therefore merciful, as your Father also is merciful. Judge not, and ye shall not be judged: condemn not, and ye shall not be condemned: forgive, and ye shall be forgiven: Give, and it shall be given unto you; good measure, pressed down, and shaken together, and running over, shall men give into your bosom. For with the same measure that ye mete withal it shall be measured to you again. (Luke 6:35-38).

Also I say unto you, Whosoever shall confess me before men, him shall the Son of man also confess before the angels of God: But he that denieth me before men shall be denied before the

angels of God. And whosoever shall speak a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but unto him that blasphemeth against the Holy Ghost it shall not be forgiven. (Luke 12:8-10).

And seek not ye what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink, neither be ye of doubtful mind. For all these things do the nations of the world seek after: and your Father knoweth that ye have need of these things. But rather seek ye the kingdom of God; and all these things shall be added unto you. (Luke 12:29-31).

He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life: and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him. (John 3:36).

Then said Jesus to those Jews which believed on him, If ye continue in my word, then are ye my disciples indeed; And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free. (John 8:31-32).

He which soweth sparingly shall reap also sparingly; and he which soweth bountifully shall reap also bountifully. (2 Corinthians 9:6).

And whatsoever ye do, do it heartily, as to the Lord, and not unto men; Knowing that of the Lord ye shall receive the reward of the inheritance: for ye serve the Lord Christ. But he that doeth wrong shall receive for the wrong which he hath done: and there is no respect of persons. (Colossians 3:23-25).

So Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many; and unto them that look for him shall he appear the second time without sin unto salvation. (Hebrews 9:28).

Follow peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord: Looking diligently lest any man fail of the grace of God; lest any root of bitterness springing up trouble you, and thereby many be defiled; (Hebrews 12:14-15).

For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all. For he that said, Do not commit adultery, said also, Do not kill. Now if thou commit no adultery, yet if thou kill, thou art become a transgressor of the law. (James 2:10-11).

Whosoever shall confess that Jesus is the Son of God, God dwelleth in him, and he in God. And we have known and believed the love that God hath to us. God is love; and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him. (1 John 4:15-16).

## WHAT SHOULD WE NOT DO?

The following begins with the Ten Commandments:

1. I am the Lord thy God. Thou shalt have no other gods before me. 2. Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of any thing that is in heaven above, or that is in the

earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth. Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them: for I the Lord thy God am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate me; And shewing mercy unto thousands of them that love me, and keep my commandments.

3. Thou shalt not take the name of the Lord thy God in vain; for the Lord will not hold him guiltless that taketh his name in vain.

4. Remember the sabbath day, to keep it holy. Six days shalt thou labour, and do all thy work: But the seventh day is the sabbath of the Lord thy God: in it thou shalt not do any work, thou, nor thy son, nor thy daughter, thy manservant, nor thy maidservant, nor thy cattle, nor thy stranger that is within thy gates: For in six days the Lord made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day: wherefore the Lord blessed the sabbath day, and hallowed it.

5. Honour thy father and thy mother: that thy days may be long upon the land which the Lord thy God giveth thee. [This is the commandment we should do. This is the only commandment with promise.]

6. Thou shalt not kill.

7. Thou shalt not commit adultery.

8. Thou shalt not steal.

9. Thou shalt not bear false witness against thy neighbour.

10. Thou shalt not covet thy neighbour's house, thou shalt not covet thy neighbour's wife, nor his manservant, nor his maidservant, nor his ox, nor his ass, nor any thing that is thy neighbour's.

(Exodus 20:1-10)

But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret; and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly. But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking. (Matthew 6:6-7).

He that loveth father or mother more than me is not worthy of me: and he that loveth son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me. And he that taketh not his cross, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me. He that findeth his life shall lose it: and he that loseth his life for my sake shall find it. He that receiveth you receiveth me, and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me. (Matthew 10:37-40).

And Jesus answering said unto him, It is said, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God. (Luke 4:12).

Labour not for the meat which perisheth, but for that meat which endureth unto everlasting life, which the Son of man shall give unto you: for him hath God the Father sealed. (John 6:27).

## SEEK ONLY THE BIBLE FOR DOCTRINE

It is dangerous and anti-God to extract as doctrine any beliefs from sources other than the Bible. Remember Charles Templeton from the Foreword. This man of God, on fire with the

good news of salvation and our Savior, came to believe something written by men, men with fallible minds. Even more tragic, he was convinced by a lie. I firmly believe evolution is a lie.

Also remember the young Southern Baptist man mentioned in Chapter 3. He walked away from God for the same reason as Charles Templeton. He took the word of man over the Word of God.

Of course only a Christian can think this way. If a Christian accepts the Bible as the Word of God, then the conflict between man's words and God's Words exists. A person that does not believe in God likewise does not believe the Bible, and that brings us back to the impossibility of proving the existence of God to a non-believer.

## DO YOU JUST HAVE TO DO THE BEST YOU CAN?

Doing the best you can is wonderful. Is that not what we teach our children? Is that not also what God would have us, His children do? What more can you expect? One last question; have you read the following scripture: *Man, being born not into perfection, but doing good works unto the best he can, convinceth the Father of his eternal inheritance in Heaven?* Nah, I never saw that verse anywhere either.

God sets the standards. Moses did not write the Ten Commandments, go to the mountain, and "run them by the Big Guy" like we might do on earth with our bosses. No, God wrote the Ten Commandments with His own finger. God gave all of the preceding scripture, by which we know His rules, His will, and our standards. There is only one way; God's Way.

## GOD'S WAY

<sup>1</sup>Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in me. <sup>2</sup>In my Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. <sup>3</sup>And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, there ye may be also. <sup>4</sup>And whither I go ye know, and the way ye know. <sup>5</sup>Thomas saith unto him, Lord, we know not whither thou goest; and how can we know the way? <sup>6</sup>Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me. (John 14:1-6)

Those six verses are God's way. Do you believe in God's way? If you do, then there is a place in Heaven for you, as verse 2 says. Jesus tells us in verse 6 that He is the way to Heaven (to the Father). As the preceding scripture has told us, we are all sinners and need redemption for our sins. Jesus is the Lamb of God who has died for our sins. If you confess to God that you are a sinner, believe that Jesus is the Son of God, and invite Him into your heart to be your Lord and Savior, then Jesus will prepare a place for you in His Father's kingdom. If you have not done this before, do it now.

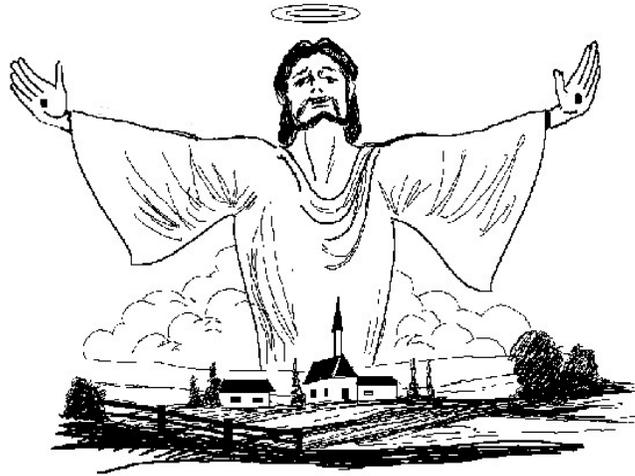
Please do not delay. Life is so uncertain. Recently the great racing driver, Dale Earnhart, was sitting on the top of the world on the last lap of a big race. He never made it to the finish line. Make sure you do! I cannot repeat enough that everyone has the power to be accepted into Heaven, but not everyone will use it:

Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity. (Matthew 7:21-23).

Look at the promise of what is to come for those who put their trust in Jesus:

And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea. And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, *the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, and be their God. And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away.* And he that sat upon the throne said, Behold, I make all things new. (Revelation 21:1-5a).

## Chapter 5. What Church?



“When the roll is called up yonder I’ll be there.”

I plan to be up yonder when the roll is called. There will be people from all sorts of churches. We will even be in the same place. I have not seen anything in the Bible to indicate that there will be a Catholic gate, Presbyterian gate, Baptist section, etc. We are told in the Bible for the most part *what to believe*. We are also told by Christ *how to worship* in the book of Revelation.

### HYPOCRITES AND THE “SEVEN WOES”

One thing for certain, Jesus did not like hypocrites. He was very emphatic in the following dissertation known as The Seven Woes:

<sup>1</sup>Then spake Jesus to the multitude, and to his disciples, <sup>2</sup>Saying, The scribes and the Pharisees sit in Moses' seat: <sup>3</sup>All therefore whatsoever they bid you observe, that observe and do; *but do not ye after their works: for they say, and do not.* <sup>12</sup>And whosoever shall exalt himself shall be abased; and *he that shall humble himself shall be exalted.* <sup>13</sup>But **woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites!** for ye shut up the kingdom of heaven against men: for ye neither go in yourselves, neither suffer ye them that are entering to go in. <sup>14</sup>**Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites!** for ye devour widows' houses, and for a pretence make long prayer: therefore ye shall receive the greater damnation. <sup>15</sup>**Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites!** for ye compass sea and land to make one proselyte, and when he is made, ye make him twofold more the child of hell than yourselves. <sup>16</sup>Woe unto you, ye blind guides, which say, Whosoever shall swear by the temple, it is nothing; but whosoever shall swear by the gold of the temple, he is a debtor! <sup>17</sup>Ye fools and blind: for whether is greater, the gold, or the temple that sanctifieth the gold? <sup>23</sup>**Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites!** for ye pay tithe of

mint and anise and cummin, and have omitted the weightier matters of the law, judgment, mercy, and faith: these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone. <sup>24</sup>Ye blind guides, which strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel. <sup>25</sup>**Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites!** for ye make clean the outside of the cup and of the platter, but within they are full of extortion and excess. <sup>26</sup>Thou blind Pharisee, cleanse first that which is within the cup and platter, that the outside of them may be clean also. <sup>27</sup>**Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites!** for ye are like unto whited sepulchres, which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within full of dead men's bones, and of all uncleanness. <sup>28</sup>Even so ye also outwardly appear righteous unto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisy and iniquity. <sup>29</sup>**Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites!** because ye build the tombs of the prophets, and garnish the sepulchres of the righteous, <sup>30</sup>And say, If we had been in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets. <sup>31</sup>Wherefore ye be witnesses unto yourselves, that ye are the children of them which killed the prophets. <sup>32</sup>Fill ye up then the measure of your fathers. <sup>33</sup>Ye serpents, ye generation of vipers, how can ye escape the damnation of hell? (Matthew 23:1-3, 12-17, 23-33)



Chasing the moneychangers from the temple.

Christ tells us elsewhere in the Scriptures what to believe, how we should behave and treat others, and even what attributes he likes and dislikes about certain churches. Christ says, “To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the midst of the paradise of God.” (Revelation 2:7b). “Who is he that overcometh the world, but he that believeth that Jesus is the Son of God?” (1 John 5:5). These instructions follow:

#### THE SEVEN CHURCHES OF ASIA MINOR

I could not tell you how many times I have read the book of Revelation. When I was a teenager I became fascinated with the “mystery,” compounded by a teenager’s imagination. Plus, from other teenagers I would hear things like “astronomers have found a giant cube, the shape of the New Jerusalem, traveling toward earth. It is supposed to arrive in the year 1990.” Of course that was not true, but hearing news like that when you are a teen, albeit nonsense, is exciting.

About a year ago, a book entitled *Revelation Unveiled*, written by Tim LaHaye, caught my eye. Tim LaHaye and Jerry B. Jenkins together have done such a wonderful job with the *Left Behind* series. I could hardly wait to start reading my new book. I opened it, and as every prior time that I read Revelation, was prepared to start where Revelation chapter 4 started. I had no interest in reading the letters in Chapters 2 and 3 addressed to old churches 2000 years ago.

Fortunately, just before the introduction, Mr. LaHaye inserted a chart that explains the “commendations, condemnations, counsels, and challenges” pertaining to these seven churches. The chart implies that each church was a different type, most representing churches that are still in existence. Therefore, I thought it best to start at the beginning. I did, and found that I had been incomplete in my understanding by not reading about the seven churches previously.

<sup>1</sup>Write a letter to the leader of the CHURCH AT EPHESUS and tell him this: I write to inform you of a message from him who walks among the churches and holds their leaders in his right hand. He says to you: <sup>2</sup>I know how many good things you are doing. I have watched your hard work and your patience; I know you don't tolerate sin among your members, and you have carefully examined the claims of those who say they are apostles but aren't. You have found out how they lie. <sup>3</sup>You have patiently suffered for me without quitting. <sup>4</sup>Yet there is one thing wrong; you don't love me as at first! <sup>5</sup>Think about those times of your first love (how different now!) and turn back to me again and work as you did before; or else I will come and remove your candlestick from its place among the churches. <sup>6</sup>But there is this about you that is good: You hate the deeds of the licentious Nicolaitans, just as I do. <sup>7</sup>Let this message sink into the ears of anyone who listens to what the Spirit is saying to the churches: To everyone who is victorious (Overcomers KJV), I will give fruit from the Tree of Life in the Paradise of God. (Revelation 2:1-7 Living Bible).

Jesus liked the good works of the church at Ephesus (not good works unto salvation, but “unto good works”- *Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God and our Saviour Jesus Christ; Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works* (Titus 2:13-14); however, they don't love Jesus as at first. Good works without Christ is empty religion. Jesus despised the Nicolaitans and was glad that this church also despised them. The Nicolaitans were a sect in the early church who followed the doctrine of Balaam (a man of great power who chose to worship idols in spite of his knowledge of the true God), which taught the excesses of heathenism, and freedom of the flesh. The Nicolaitans were present in the church at Pergamos as well. The victorious will eat of the Tree of Life. So Christ tells us here to love Him, do good works, and abandon heathen ways.

The reference to the “Victorious” in the Living Bible Version is the same as to the “Overcomers” in the King James Version: simply those who persevere. They are not persons with special deeds. Overcomers are those who have overcome the “wages of sin” by their faith in Christ as their Savior.

<sup>8</sup>To the leader of the CHURCH IN SMYRNA write this letter: This message is from him who is the First and Last, who was dead and then came back to life. <sup>9</sup>I know how much you suffer for the Lord, and I know all about your poverty (but you have heavenly riches!). I know the slander of those opposing you, who say that they are Jews--the children of God--but they aren't, for they

support the cause of Satan. <sup>10</sup>Stop being afraid of what you are about to suffer--for the devil will soon throw some of you into prison to test you. You will be persecuted for ten days. Remain faithful even when facing death and I will give you the crown of life--an unending, glorious future. <sup>11</sup>Let everyone who can hear, listen to what the Spirit is saying to the churches: He who is victorious shall not be hurt by the Second Death. (Revelation 2:8-11 Living Bible)

Jesus loves those who willingly live in persecution for his sake, and promises a reward of heavenly riches for their earthly poverty. How many of us would live in poverty and persecution for the Lord? We are reminded that the Jews are God's chosen people (woe unto those that persecute God's chosen people). The victorious are promised eternal life. This is repeated in the letters to all seven churches.

<sup>12</sup>Write this letter to the leader of the CHURCH IN PERGAMOS: This message is from him who wields the sharp and double-bladed sword. <sup>13</sup>I am fully aware that you live in the city where Satan's throne is, at the center of satanic worship; and yet you have remained loyal to me, and refused to deny me, even when Antipas, my faithful witness, was martyred among you by Satan's devotees. <sup>14</sup>And yet I have a few things against you. You tolerate some among you who do as Balaam did when he taught Balak how to ruin the people of Israel by involving them in sexual sin and encouraging them to go to idol feasts. <sup>15</sup>Yes, you have some of these very same followers of Balaam among you! <sup>16</sup>Change your mind and attitude, or else I will come to you suddenly and fight against them with the sword of my mouth. <sup>17</sup>Let everyone who can hear, listen to what the Spirit is saying to the churches: Every one who is victorious shall eat of the hidden manna, the secret nourishment from heaven; and I will give to each a white stone, and on the stone will be engraved a new name that no one else knows except the one receiving it. (Revelation 2:12-17 Living Bible)

This church has stood up to Satan. It is easier to stand up to Satan when you know who he is. But Satan is the great deceiver. This church has members that follow Nicolai and Balaam, and the church tolerates their lusts of the flesh. Christ clearly does not tolerate them. Yet, the Overcomers will find eternal life. This is not a lesson that it is okay to become a Christian, then go out and live how you want. The Overcomers are not the ones following desires of the flesh. If you disagree, would you like to debate the issue with me now, or Jesus later?

<sup>18</sup>Write this letter to the leader of the CHURCH IN THYATIRA: This is a message from the Son of God, whose eyes penetrate like flames of fire, whose feet are like glowing brass. <sup>19</sup>I am aware of all your good deeds--your kindness to the poor, your gifts and service to them; also I know your love and faith and patience, and I can see your constant improvement in all these things. <sup>20</sup>Yet I have this against you: You are permitting that woman Jezebel, who calls herself a prophetess, to teach my servants that sex sin is not a serious matter; she urges them to practice immorality and to eat meat that has been sacrificed to idols. <sup>21</sup>I gave her time to change her mind and attitude, but she refused. <sup>22</sup>Pay attention now to what I am saying: I will lay her upon a sickbed of intense affliction, along with all her immoral followers, unless they turn again to me, repenting of their sin with her; <sup>23</sup>and I will strike her children dead. And all the churches shall know that I am he who searches deep within men's hearts, and minds; I will give to each of you whatever you deserve. <sup>24</sup>As for the rest of you in Thyatira who have not followed this false

teaching (deeper truths, as they call them--depths of Satan, really), I will ask nothing further of you; only hold tightly to what you have until I come. <sup>26</sup>To every one who overcomes--who to the very end keeps on doing things that please me--I will give power over the nations. <sup>27</sup>You will rule them with a rod of iron just as my Father gave me the authority to rule them; they will be shattered like a pot of clay that is broken into tiny pieces. <sup>28</sup>And I will give you the Morning Star! <sup>29</sup>Let all who can hear, listen to what the Spirit says to the churches. (Revelation 2:18-29 Living Bible)

This pagan church followed many pagan rituals. Also, the church members in Thyatira lusted after the flesh and sexual sin. God made sex a desirable experience, but He ordained it to be between a husband and wife. Because sex is so desirable, it is a frequent sin, and perhaps why prostitution is termed “the oldest profession.” Christ here tells us how seriously God takes sexual sin. Christ makes reference to “vengeance is mine” which clearly shows how unhappy He is with this church. To those not taken in by Satan, Jesus instructs them to hold on tightly. The Overcomers will help Jesus rule the nations.

<sup>1</sup>To the leader of the CHURCH IN SARDIS write this letter: This message is sent to you by the one who has the seven-fold Spirit of God and the seven stars. I know your reputation as a live and active church, but you are dead. <sup>2</sup>Now wake up! Strengthen what little remains--for even what is left is at the point of death. Your deeds are far from right in the sight of God. <sup>3</sup>Go back to what you heard and believed at first; hold to it firmly and turn to me again. Unless you do, I will come suddenly upon you, unexpected as a thief, and punish you. <sup>4</sup>Yet even there in Sardis some haven't soiled their garments with the world's filth; they shall walk with me in white, for they are worthy. <sup>5</sup>Everyone who conquers will be clothed in white, and I will not erase his name from the Book of Life, but I will announce before my Father and his angels that he is mine. <sup>6</sup>Let all who can hear, listen to what the Spirit is saying to the churches. (Revelation 3:1-6 Living Bible)

This church is dead. Their deeds give the appearance of abundant life for God, but they are misguided. Jesus urges them to go back to what they were, a church living for God. Jesus will punish them if they do not return to their earlier ways. The church of Sardis is a church of ritual. Their rites give the appearance of a live and active church, but are far from proper in the eyes of God. Many churches today fit this description of having rituals that give the appearance of a “live and active church, but (they) are dead.” There are members of this church who have remained as they were, and shall walk with Christ throughout eternity.

<sup>7</sup>Write this letter to the leader of the CHURCH IN PHILADELPHIA. This message is sent to you by the one who is holy and true, and has the key of David to open what no one can shut and to shut what no one can open. <sup>8</sup>I know you well; you aren't strong, but you have tried to obey and have not denied my Name. Therefore I have opened a door to you that no one can shut. <sup>9</sup>Note this: I will force those supporting the causes of Satan while claiming to be mine (but they aren't--they are lying) to fall at your feet and acknowledge that you are the ones I love. <sup>10</sup>Because you have patiently obeyed me despite the persecution, therefore I will protect you from the time of Great Tribulation and temptation, which will come upon the world to test everyone alive. <sup>11</sup>Look, I am coming soon! Hold tightly to the little strength you have--so that

no one will take away your crown. <sup>12</sup>As for the one who conquers, I will make him a pillar in the temple of my God; he will be secure, and will go out no more; and I will write my God's Name on him, and he will be a citizen in the city of my God--the New Jerusalem, coming down from heaven from my God; and he will have my new Name inscribed upon him. <sup>13</sup>Let all who can hear, listen to what the Spirit is saying to the churches. (Revelation 3:7-13 Living Bible)

The church of Philadelphia is the evangelical church of today. This church will endure until the Tribulation according to verse 10, and will be raptured ahead of the atrocities of that time. Mostly other Christians persecute these church members even today, as they are the ridiculed "Born Again Christians." Those who conquer will enter into the New Jerusalem.

<sup>14</sup>Write this letter to the leader of the CHURCH IN LAODICEA: This message is from the one who stands firm, the faithful and true Witness [of all that is or was or evermore shall be], the primeval source of God's creation: <sup>15</sup>I know you well--you are neither hot nor cold; I wish you were one or the other! <sup>16</sup>But since you are merely lukewarm, I will spit you out of my mouth! <sup>17</sup>You say, I am rich, with everything I want; I don't need a thing! And you don't realize that spiritually you are wretched and miserable and poor and blind and naked. <sup>18</sup>My advice to you is to buy pure gold from me, gold purified by fire--only then will you truly be rich. And to purchase from me white garments, clean and pure, so you won't be naked and ashamed; and to get medicine from me to heal your eyes and give you back your sight. <sup>19</sup>I continually discipline and punish everyone I love; so I must punish you, unless you turn from your indifference and become enthusiastic about the things of God. <sup>20</sup>Look! I have been standing at the door and I am constantly knocking. If anyone hears me calling him and opens the door, I will come in and fellowship with him and he with me. <sup>21</sup>I will let every one who conquers sit beside me on my throne, just as I took my place with my Father on his throne when I had conquered. <sup>22</sup>Let those who can hear, listen to what the Spirit is saying to the churches." (Revelation 3:14-22 Living Bible)

The ecumenical church movement (the compromisers) started in the twentieth century. It is here to stay and will continue straight into the first 42 months of the tribulation. The ecumenical movement is one big church that is all about anything but God. Jesus will "spew them out of His mouth because they are lukewarm." But the Overcomers in this church will find salvation as well. In fact there will be a great number of "tribulation saints," but during this period it will be harder than ever to turn one's back to Satan.

## WHICH MEMBERS OF WHICH CHURCH WILL GO TO HEAVEN?

Seven churches, seven different opinions from Christ. The interesting thing is that Jesus tells all seven churches that "he who overcomes" (the "Overcomers," those who have accepted the Lord Jesus Christ as Savior) will have eternal life.

- Anyone who listens to what the (Holy) Spirit is saying to the churches.
- Those who remain faithful even when facing death.
- Those who remained loyal to me, and refused to deny me.

- Those who to the very end keep on doing things that please me.
- Some that have not soiled their garments with the world's filth.
- You who have patiently obeyed me despite the persecution.
- Anyone who hears me calling and opens the door.

These references are to traits of believers, not acts earning salvation.

## CHRIST'S "RECOMMENDED CHURCH"

If you rolled into a strange town some Sunday morning, and unwittingly pulled along the curb to ask Jesus for directions to a nice church, what would He say? There are seven churches in this little town. He would start out telling you that three of the churches closed: the Apostolic Church of Ephesus, the Persecuted Church of Smyrna, and the First Church of Balaam of Pergamos. He might continue that the Ecumenical Church of Laodicea is closed this Sunday because of a Buddhist holiday. That only leaves three choices.

Jesus might ask, "Have you ever been to a Thyatiran service?" They use a lot of ritual that if you are not used to, might make you feel out of place. In fact, there is more ritual than Gospel.

"How about a church with a bit less ritual. Have you ever been to a Sardist church? You want a church that is very much alive, no ritual, a strong sermon based on lots of scripture? Well then, you should go to the First Church of Philadelphia. Today's sermon is 'why we should not compromise the Church neither with pagans nor the scientific views on the theory of evolution'."

## SATAN'S "RECOMMENDATION"

Satan, being the great deceiver that he is, would want you to go to whatever church is Christ's least favorite. It is believed by many evangelical theologians that the ecumenical church, "that great Jezebel" of the book of Revelation, will be the church of the Tribulation. That figures because by then the ecumenical church will have very diluted doctrine, if any at all. It appears that even "Satan's Church" will be banned at the start of the Great Tribulation (last 42 months of the tribulation).

## WATCH FOR FALSE PROPHETS

How do we know who is a false prophet? Should the Mormons have thought their founders were false prophets? If they deny the divinity of Christ, that is a sure sign. From the fruit of their works, you will know.

<sup>1</sup>Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world. <sup>2</sup>Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God: <sup>3</sup>And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that spirit of antichrist, whereof ye

have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world. <sup>4</sup>Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them: because greater is he that is in you, than he that is in the world. (1 John 4:1-4)

<sup>15</sup>Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves. <sup>16</sup>Ye shall know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles? <sup>17</sup>Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit. <sup>18</sup>A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. <sup>19</sup>Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. <sup>20</sup>Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them. (Matt. 7:15-20)

There will be a false prophet above all others in the tribulation. Do not be here with him. The believers and Overcomers from the church age will have been raptured into God's kingdom before the start of the Tribulation. Anyone left behind will not have the saints to help them. The false prophet and Satan ultimately have a date with a fiery furnace. (Revelation 19:20 and 20:10).

## CLOSING THOUGHTS

Satan loves causing internal strife in good church families- where else? I have been saying that Satan's greatest lie is evolution. Others have said that Satan's greatest deception is to cause an illusion that he does not exist.

There is only *one* way to eternal life. *Behold, I stand at the door and knock; if any man hear my voice, and opens the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with Me.* (Revelation 3:20). Is Jesus knocking at your door? Will you open up and let him in?

## Chapter 6. Which Children Should Live?



**Will the Lord be pleased with thousands of rams, or with ten thousands of rivers of oil? Shall I give my firstborn for my transgression, the fruit of my body for the sin of my soul? (Micah 6:7)**

My address to a jury at the start of a hearing on abortion would be: “If abortion were used to solve unwanted pregnancies throughout history, there would be a profound difference in what the world would be today compared to what it really is. I intend to present evidence that abortion is morally wrong in man’s terms, in God’s terms, is murder, and is a sin against God. I would not be before this jury today if unwanted pregnancies were resolved 100 years ago with murderous dispatch, and neither would my family. I challenge you to look back into your own family and see if the same is true. Would you be here? If there is no God, then we are murderers playing God. If there is a God, and the wages of sin is death, if we allow abortion we deserve to be damned.”

### WHAT EXACTLY IS ABORTION, AND WHY THE CONFLICT?

“Abortion (is the) termination of pregnancy before birth, resulting in, or accompanied by, the death of the fetus. Spontaneous abortion is commonly known as a miscarriage. Other abortions are induced; that is, intentionally brought on, because a pregnancy is unwanted or presents a risk to a woman’s health. Abortion has become one of the most widely debated ethical issues of our time. On one side are pro-choice supporters, individuals who favor a woman’s reproductive rights, including the right to choose to have an abortion. On the other side are the pro-life advocates,

who oppose abortion except in extreme circumstances, as when the mother's life would be threatened by carrying a pregnancy to term. At one end of this ethical spectrum are pro-choice defenders who believe the fetus is only a potential human being until it is *viable*. Until this time the fetus has no legal rights—the rights belong to the woman carrying the fetus, who can decide whether or not to bring the pregnancy to full term. At the other end of the spectrum are pro-life supporters who believe the fetus is a human being from the time of conception"<sup>21</sup>. (Emphasis added.)

I have seen photographs of aborted babies. They have little hands and little feet. They once were living. As far as *viable*, what is viable? You could stick me out in the woods with nothing and I would survive for a while. Perhaps I would live a long time all by myself in society. How about a 6-month old baby? How would it do on its own? 12 months? The baby would die. So, you can kill a one-year old baby because it is not viable, right? We live in a day when rationalization for purposes of our own ends is our god.

## THE WORLD VIEW

Man's view, or the world-view, secular view (or lustful view in some opinions) is that we can toss these unborn babies away at our convenience. A pro-life supporter would jump in right here and talk about rape and incest. This would be very interesting; designation of sin by convenience. Morally, rape and incest are evil measures. Murder is an evil measure. Murder of a baby because of rape and incest is a virtuous measure? That is the old "two wrongs don't make a right."

The following quote is from Dr. Irvin M. Cushner, as testimony to the U.S. Senate Committee on the Judiciary, 97<sup>th</sup> Congress, First Session, 1983, p. 158, "Over 99% of all U.S. abortions have nothing to do with the life or health of the woman. They are done simply because of her desire for convenience, absence of distress, and her so-called happiness."

Those that favor abortion speak of instances when the mother's life is in danger. They say they have their "just cause," and then they contradict themselves and include abortion as a means to end unwanted pregnancies. We have taught our young people that they can go out and be immoral, and if they make a mistake, they can "have it taken care of."

The abortion clinics all have counselors to speak to the expectant mothers. By now, such counseling is probably expert. We could extend counseling service to anyone considering armed robbery, murder, and especially those considering a career as a serial killer. This idea, by the same logic, could allow us to more readily accept murder. Perhaps this would convince enough people to do away with the death penalty, thereby saving more innocent lives. Pardon my sarcasm.

It is too bad we cannot turn back the clock. The landmark court decision that is as responsible as any if not most responsible for allowing abortion and pro-choice was the 1973 Supreme Court case *Roe v. Wade*. The woman known as Jane Roe in that trial, Norma McCorvey, has changed her mind on abortion. According to an Associated Press release, "McCorvey stated, 'My case was wrongfully decided, and has caused great harm to the women

and children of our nation.” McCorvey, 53, now lives in Dallas and is active in anti-abortion causes.<sup>22</sup>

## WHAT DOES GOD SAY?

God is the creator. He set the rules. He obviously considers an embryo a precious being:

For thou hast possessed my reins: thou hast covered me in my mother's womb. I will praise thee; for I am fearfully and wonderfully made: marvelous are thy works; and that my soul knoweth right well. My substance was not hid from thee, when I was made in secret, and curiously wrought in the lowest parts of the earth. (Psalms 139:13-15)

All Jews and Christians should willingly follow His rules. It is unfortunate that the rest of the world does not know the God that made them. They live without the true God; therefore, their laws are of them and their created gods, and are set by man. Let us search God's word, for what He does say:

Thou shalt not kill. (Exodus 20:13)

Keep thee far from a false matter; and the innocent and righteous slay thou not: for I will not justify the wicked. (Exodus 23:7)

We will not hide them from their children, shewing to the generation to come the praises of the Lord, and his strength, and his wonderful works that he hath done. For he established a testimony in Jacob, and appointed a law in Israel, which he commanded our fathers, that they should make them known to their children: That the generation to come might know them, even the children which should be born; who should arise and declare them to their children: That they might set their hope in God, and not forget the works of God, but keep his commandments: (Psalms 78:4-7)

Lo, children are an heritage of the Lord: and the fruit of the womb is his reward. As arrows are in the hand of a mighty man; so are children of one's youth. Happy is the man that hath his quiver full of them: they shall not be ashamed, but they shall speak with the enemies in the gate. (Psalm 127:3-5)

Thy wife shall be as a fruitful vine by the sides of thine house: thy children like olive plants round about thy table. (Psalm 128:3)

The highway of the upright is to depart from evil: he that keepeth his way preserveth his soul. Pride goeth before destruction, and an haughty spirit before a fall. Better it is to be of an humble spirit with the lowly, than to divide the spoil with the proud. (Proverbs 16:17-19)

Children's children are the crown of old men; and the glory of children are their fathers. (Proverbs 17:6)

**The Prophet Jeremiah:** Then the word of the Lord came unto me saying, **Before I formed thee in the womb, I knew thee; and before thou camest forth out of the womb, I sanctified thee, and I ordained thee a prophet** unto the nations. (Jeremiah 1:4-5)

**John the Baptist:** But the angel said unto him, Fear not, Zacharias: for thy prayer is heard; and thy wife Elisabeth shall bear thee a son, and thou shalt call his name John. And thou shalt have joy and gladness; and many shall rejoice at his birth. For he shall be great in the sight of the Lord, and shall drink neither wine nor strong drink; and **he shall be filled with the Holy Ghost, even from his mother's womb.** (Luke 1:13-15)

Therefore, brethren, we are debtors, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh. For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live. (Romans 8:12-13)

And they that are Christ's have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts. (Galatians 5:24)

Flee also youthful lusts: but follow righteousness, faith, charity, peace, with them that call on the Lord out of a pure heart. (2 Timothy 2:22)

From whence come wars and fightings among you? come they not hence, even of your lusts that war in your members? Ye lust, and have not: ye kill, and desire to have, and cannot obtain: ye fight and war, yet ye have not, because ye ask not. Ye ask, and receive not, because ye ask amiss, that ye may consume it upon your lusts. Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the enemy of God. (James 4:1-4)

As obedient children, not fashioning yourselves according to the former lusts in your ignorance: But as he which hath called you is holy, so be ye holy in all manner of conversation; Because it is written, Be ye holy; for I am holy (1 Peter 1:14-16)

Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust. (2 Peter 1:4)

For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world. And the world passeth away,

and the lust thereof: but he that doeth the will of God abideth for ever. (1 John 2:16-17)

Beloved, let us love one another: for love is of God; and every one that loveth is born of God, and knoweth God. He that loveth not knoweth not God; for God is love. (1 John 4:7-8)

How that they told you there should be mockers in the last time, who should walk after their own ungodly lusts. These be they who separate themselves, sensual, having not the spirit. (Jude 1:18-19)

According to scripture, abortion is murder. Killing unborn babies violates the Ten Commandments. God consecrated the prophet Jeremiah before he was formed in his mother's womb (Jeremiah 1:4-5). John the Baptist was filled with the Holy Spirit while in his mother's womb (Luke 1:13-15). It is probable, in my opinion, that all babies receive their souls while in their mothers' womb. Dr. Cushner's testimony implies that abortion is for the convenience of people that sinned due to lust, and needed a remedy for a situation they did not want. In other words, convenience.

#### A MATTER OF CONVENIENCE

From a recent article by the Associated Press<sup>23</sup> about an AMA recommendation of selling the morning-after pill over-the-counter: Joan Coombs, senior vice president of Planned Parenthood said, "This is a wonderful (recommendation) by the AMA." She said widespread use of the morning-after pill could prevent 1.7 million unplanned pregnancies and 800,000 abortions annually.

This pill will abort pregnancies if taken within three days of intercourse. This is still murder just as much as if it were using forceps on a 5-month old fetus. I guess at 3 days, one does not look, feel, or act pregnant, so it appears to be "no big deal." Contrary to the implication by Ms. Coombs, this is still abortion.

#### HOW THEY KILL THE BABIES

*D&C. Dilation and Curettage* is a common procedure. The baby is cut into pieces with a sharp scraping instrument after the cervix is dilated with several other instruments.

*VACUUM ASPIRATION. Suction Curettage* is as above except that instead of cutting the baby with a curette, a strong suction tube is used. The suction dismembers the baby and vacuums it into a jar.

*D&E. Dilation and Evacuation* is a method of killing larger babies of 12-20 weeks of age. Sharp-teethed forceps are used to tear-away the baby's body piece by piece. Usually, the baby's head is too large to be extracted whole. In this event, the head must be crushed and drained prior to removal.

**SALINE INJECTION.** Still larger babies (after 16 weeks) are killed by *saline poisoning*. A salt solution is injected through the mother's abdomen into the womb. The baby suffers, kicks, and jerks violently for over an hour until it dies. Within 24 hours, labor will begin. Usually the baby is born dead, others need more time of nonattendance to die.

**CAESAREAN SECTION.** Just as *c-section* is used to deliver wanted babies, the same procedure is used to deliver the unwanted. After delivery, the baby is allowed to die by neglect. This procedure is used in the last 3 months of pregnancy. Many of these babies at this stage could live if wanted.

**CHEMICAL ABORTION.** Chemicals developed by a pharmaceutical company are used to perform a *prostaglandin chemical abortion*. The chemicals cause intense contractions so strong that generally the contractions kill the baby. Some of the babies are born alive and allowed to die.

**PARTIAL BIRTH.** In *D&X* abortion, the cervix is dilated. The baby is pulled into the birth canal in breech fashion. An incision is made in the baby's head. The brain is removed by suction, collapsing the head. The body is then "delivered."

We are in the twenty-first century. We think we are so smart and advanced. How can we not see that abortion is murder?

## CHRISTIAN COUNSELING

If you are in a situation of recommending counseling to a woman with a pregnancy concern, recommend Christian counseling. A secular medical facility is influenced by the evolutionary thought processes we read about earlier, and is biased by "of the flesh" mentality—we are just high animal forms responsible only to ourselves. In contrast, read the scripture found prominently in Christian pro-life training materials:

<sup>18</sup>All these new things are from God who brought us back to himself through what Christ Jesus did. And God has given us the privilege of urging everyone to come into his favor and be reconciled to him. <sup>19</sup>For God was in Christ, restoring the world to himself, no longer counting men's sins against them but blotting them out. This is the wonderful message he has given us to tell others. <sup>21</sup>We are Christ's ambassadors. God is using us to speak to you: we beg you, as though Christ himself were here pleading with you, receive the love he offers you--be reconciled to God. (2 Corinthians 5:18-20 Living Bible).

I am but a man writing about a decision I will never have to face; but I do know that the Christian counselors offer a message of love in a time of turmoil. Talk to these tenderhearted women if you have a need. Let them guide you to a responsible decision, an informed decision, and the right decision.

## THE ADOPTION OPTION

Unwanted pregnancies are usually the sad results of people having a good (lustful) time and not willing to pay the consequences. Pregnancies should be joyous results, blessings from God of happy, marital unions. Unwanted pregnancies have happened for thousands of years.

What was unwanted for some became opportunity for others. Many loving couples that wanted children, but could not have their own, jumped at the chance to adopt babies. There are innumerable couples today that would leap at the opportunity to adopt more than one child.

I have several friends who were adopted as infants. Today they are productive people with families of their own. A recent acquaintance with an adopted person resulted in a significant contribution to this book. I imagine you know someone who was adopted. If you know that person well, can you imagine the world without them? What if they had been killed in their mother's womb?

## A GLIMMER OF HOPE

If two men are fighting, and in the process hurt a pregnant woman so that she has a miscarriage, but she lives, then the man who injured her shall be fined whatever amount the woman's husband shall demand, and as the judges approve. (Exodus 21:22)

On April 26, 2001, the U.S. House of Representatives passed a bill making it a crime to harm a fetus. President Bush said, "This legislation affirms our commitment to a culture of life which welcomes and protects *children*." (Emphasis added.)

One year prior, President Clinton had threatened to veto a similar bill. One can reach one's own conclusion as to how Clinton's moralities and actions go hand in hand.

Let us pray that in the future, fetuses are recognized as human beings with complete rights, as God intended. The pro-choice lobbyists will come out fighting. We have to fight back a little harder.

## WHAT CAN YOU DO?

Publicize God's view on abortion. It is murder. Have your church or group of concerned citizens take out full-page pro-life ads in newspapers. Include pictures of aborted babies. Send copies to your congressmen, state and federal.

You can obtain materials on abortion needed for your campaign from the following organizations:

- American Tract Society, PO Box 462008, Garland TX 75046
- Last Days Ministries, Box 40, Lindale TX 75771-0040

- Christian Medical and Dental Society, <http://prnewswire.com>
- See “Abortion Alternatives” in the phone book

Also, check out the following publications:

- Dr. and Mrs. J.C. Willke, *Handbook on Abortion*, Hayes Publishing Co., 6304 Hamilton Avenue, Cincinnati OH 45224
- Dr. Brian Close, *Pro-Life Encyclopedia*, Stafford: American Life League
- Pharmacists for Life International, *New Abortion Drugs, a Health Threat*, PO Box 1281, Powell OH 43065

WWJD?

Suffer the little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God. Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, he shall not enter therein. And he took them up in his arms, put his hands upon them, and blessed them. (Mark 10:14b-16)

We do not need to use our imaginations to wonder about Jesus’ position on abortion. He would tell us to go into the world and preach the Gospel, and against the pagan or heathen sin of killing unwanted children. The unwanted children are not unwanted by our Savior.

John said, “I write unto you, little children, because your sins are forgiven you for His name’s sake” (1 John 2:12). Jesus said, “I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live” (John 11:25).

This chapter was written in the interest of saving the lives of unborn children. As important as the lives of these children are, their earthly lives pale in comparison to their eternal lives. So it is with us, our eternal lives are at stake. The unsaved, dying adult perhaps should rather be a dying baby who, dying at the age of innocence, would go into eternal life.

If you are a dying adult (we are all dying) and you do not know Jesus as your Savior, accept him now. Receive the gift that God already gave us. Pray, “Lord, I am a sinner. I know I cannot save myself from sin. I know you died on the cross for the remission of my sins, if I will accept that gift from you. Jesus, please come into my heart and be my Savior, and the Lord of my life. Thank you for saving my soul. In Jesus’ name, Amen.”

## Chapter 7. Adam and Eve, or Adam and Steve?



### Lot's Family Flees Sodom

*<sup>22</sup>You shall not lie with a male as with a woman; it is an abomination. <sup>24</sup>Do not defile yourselves by any of these (lusts), for by all these the nations I am casting out before you defiled themselves; <sup>25</sup>and the land became defiled, so that I punished its iniquity, and the land vomited out its inhabitants. (Leviticus 18:22, 24-25 RSV)*

Preface: I have homosexual friends and family whom I love very much. God loves them, too. We are no man's judges. Only God is just and has that right. I am opposed to hate and hate groups of any kind, see chapter 9.

Homosexuality is a volatile, divisive subject today. When I was young, it was a subject whispered. Homosexual behavior was "in the closet." The identity of a person as a homosexual was more often suspected than confirmed. Homosexuality was not well tolerated. It caused troubles in families, in the public, in organizations, churches, the military, and wherever it existed. Homosexuality was considered an embarrassment, a subject to avoid, and a perversion that was just plain wrong.

#### NEW WORLD VIEW OF HOMOSEXUALITY

Our attitudes and tolerances have changed. At the present, "gays" are "out of the closet," (the politically correct terms). A person's "sexuality" is no longer secret. Laws have changed to prohibit discrimination against gays and allow homosexual marriages. Churches are ordaining homosexual ministers. An active, large part of the populace supports gay rights, in particular the fine arts. Though the gay population in the United States is probably under 5%, you could go on

camera and say, “I am gay, and that’s okay,” and get a more rousing applause than if you had said almost anything else.

The results of a male sexuality survey were published in *Family Planning Perspectives*, a journal issued by the Alan Guttmacher Institute (April 15, 1993). The...announced findings (were) that only about 1 percent of the male population of the United States was exclusively homosexual.<sup>8</sup>

The number of homosexuals in the population is difficult to determine, and reliable data do not exist. However, current estimates suggest that the term *homosexual* may apply to 2 to 4 percent of men. Estimates for lesbians are lower.<sup>21</sup>

The world is getting more tolerant of just about everything. We are at a stage in time when we are fighting for the rights of anything different, for peoples with disabilities, so-called racial minorities, the right to “Go where you want to go, do what you want to do” in the words of a sixties song. We will fight for the rights of animals and any other cause that comes along, *as long as it is of the flesh or does not involve God!*

Why does the world look favorably on the gay lifestyle? God says it is wrong. Of course, God said He created, and the world does not believe that either. Outside of the framework of the Bible, why is it wrong for men to be with men and women with women? Well, there is common sense. Homosexuality seems very unnatural as there is not much future in it as far as procreation. This world, under the rule of the prince of this world (John 12:31) does not want God. Therefore, the only yardstick for morality in the godless world is what the world wants. This is under the influence of *seducing spirits* in the end times (1 Timothy 4:1-3).

## OLD WORLD VIEW

Just a few decades ago, homosexuality was not only considered wrong, but we were afraid of gays. We were afraid they would seduce our children, and “who knows what else.” We were also more strongly influenced by the Bible in times past. Views that went hand-in-hand were; God, Bible, creation, Biblical morals, marriages, families. Today it is new age, evolution, do what you want as long as it is legal, live together (with same or opposite sex), divorce, and no family.

Yesterday’s family was a man and a woman, married, children, went to church together, played together, and stayed together. The parents taught Biblical values to the children, who grew up and started the cycle anew.

Today’s family is larger. It covers more real estate, also. Let us have an imaginary child tell us, “Daddy lives in Pittsburgh with my other Daddy. They moved out there when my first Daddy got out of jail for selling drugs on Sunday mornings. I live with my Mommy and my other, other Daddy. I have one sister who is my real sister. I have a half-sister. Her other Mommy lives far away. I have 12 Grandfathers and eight grandmothers, but I hardly ever get to see them.”

## BIBLICAL VIEW

In Leviticus 18:22, God calls homosexuality “an abomination.” (He did not like it). When you do not obey God, he does not like that either. We are not obeying, and we are in a real mess; but do you know, it has been worse than this before. Every former time it has been worse, God has cleaned things up his way. You know of Sodom and Gomorrah, which is where the term “sodomy” came from. You surely recall the account of the destruction of those two cities. There were others:

There was homosexuality throughout the land, and the people of Judah became as depraved as the heathen nations which the Lord drove out to make room for his people. (1 Kings 14:24 Living Bible)

And he broke down the houses of the male cult prostitutes which were in the house of the Lord, where the women wove hangings for the Asherah. (2 Kings 23:7 Revised Standard Version)

Abomination, destruction. Abomination, destruction. Abomination, destruction. I do not want to be there when God casts judgment the next time (re-read Revelation). When God brought destruction to Sodom and Gomorrah, he was ending a culture of unspeakable perversion. We generally recall this Bible story as Abraham asking God to spare Lot’s family. God sends angels to warn Lot, they leave, Lot’s wife looks back on the fiery destruction, and is turned to a pillar of salt. There is much more to the story, and more perversion than you might recall.

## SODOM AND GOMORRAH

The entire Biblical story is more like a Hollywood version of the brief account above, bringing in sex and violence. Hollywood screenwriter: “OK. These two angels go into town to get Lot. All the gays in town see these handsome angels, and want them. So they try to break into Lot’s house so they can rape the angels. Lot tells them to take his virgin daughters instead, but the townsmen only want the angels. So the angels blind the attackers. Then they go to leave, but they do not want to leave. Some of the family stays. Lot’s wife does not want to leave, but she does. They tell her not to look back, but she does, and immediately turns into a golden statue. Harrison Ford goes over, finds the statue, and brings it to Israel.” That is close. Read the real thing and rediscover why God, who can be nothing less than perfect and just, did what he did.

<sup>1</sup>Two angels came to Sodom; Lot was sitting in the gate. When Lot saw them, he rose to meet them, and bowed himself, <sup>2</sup>and said, "My lords, turn aside, I pray you, to your servant's house and spend the night; then you may rise up early and go on your way." They said, "No; we will spend the night in the street." <sup>3</sup>But he urged them strongly; so they turned aside to him and entered his house; and he made them a feast, and they ate. <sup>4</sup>But before they lay down, the men of Sodom, both young and old, all the people to the last man, surrounded the house; <sup>5</sup>and they

called to Lot, "Where are the men who came to you tonight? Bring them out to us, that we may know them." <sup>6</sup>Lot went out of the door to the men, shut the door after him, <sup>7</sup>and said, "I beg you, my brothers, do not act so wickedly. <sup>8</sup>I have two daughters who have not known man; let me bring them to you, and do to them as you please; only do nothing to these men." <sup>9</sup>But they said, "Stand back!" And they said, "This fellow came to sojourn, and he would play the judge! Now we will deal worse with you than with them." Then they pressed hard against the man Lot, and drew near to break the door. <sup>10</sup>But the (angels) brought Lot into the house, and shut the door. <sup>11</sup>And they struck with blindness the men who were at the door of the house so that they wearied themselves groping for the door. <sup>12</sup>Then the (angels) said to Lot, "Have you any one else here? Sons-in-law, sons, daughters, or any one you have in the city, bring them out; <sup>13</sup>for we are about to destroy this place, because the outcry against its people has become great before the Lord, and the Lord has sent us to destroy it." <sup>14</sup>So Lot went out and said to his sons-in-law, "Up, get out of this place; for the Lord is about to destroy the city." But he seemed to his sons-in-law to be jesting. <sup>15</sup>When morning dawned, the angels urged Lot, saying, "Arise, take your wife and your two daughters who are here, lest you be consumed in the punishment of the city." <sup>16</sup>But he lingered; so the (angels) seized him and his wife and his two daughters by the hand, the Lord being merciful to him, and they set him outside the city. <sup>17</sup>And they said, "Flee for your life; do not look back or stop lest you be consumed." <sup>18</sup>And Lot said to them, "Oh, no, my lords; <sup>19</sup>behold, your servant has found favor in your sight, and you have shown me great kindness in saving my life; but I cannot flee to the hills, lest the disaster overtake me, and I die. (Genesis 19:1-19 RSV, condensed)

In the face of the destruction of the city, Lot did not want to leave. Neither did his wife. She did look back, but the account continues to say she was turned to a pillar of salt, so the "Hollywood version" was slightly wrong.

## CONCLUSION: IS IT RIGHT OR WRONG?

The Bible says that homosexual behavior is wrong. Therefore it is wrong. The Bible was written to be true for all time. God's word rings as true today as when Moses recorded the first pen stroke. Most everything our culture is doing today on the gay issue is wrong, with the exception of tolerance. There should not be gay marriages. God sanctions marriage; He certainly would not sanction what He calls "an abomination." Gay clergy is wrong, wrong. How can a Gay minister preach about Biblical morals? A message on Sodom and Gomorrah would be very interesting.

## TOLERANCE

There is a man on death row for murdering a homosexual. This was a cold, premeditated murder. A TV interview showed that he had no remorse. He had the gall to say, when asked if

he thought the victim's family would ever forgive him, "I hope so. They better, if they want to go to Heaven." This man had no tolerance for others. He thinks that is OK. He also thinks that if the family of the man he killed in a heinous hate crime will not tolerate him, they will not go to heaven. This is the wrong definition of tolerance, people.

## WHAT TO DO?

I have gay friends that I love dearly. I have been asked how I can love one who lives in "abomination." Jesus is how. He commanded us to love one another. He commanded us to love even our enemies. It logically follows that we should love gays. Although I do not agree with their sexual lifestyle, that is between them and God. What I can do is love them, and offer them information if they want it. If you are gay, or have a gay friend or family member who is open to literature and counsel, contact the following:

Exodus International (a referral organization that can locate a ministry in your area)  
PO Box 77652, Seattle, WA 98177  
888-264-0877 (toll free- USA), others 206-784-7799  
[www.exodusintl.org](http://www.exodusintl.org)

Living Hope Ministries  
Box 2239, Arlington TX 76004  
817-459-2507  
Web: [www.livehope.org](http://www.livehope.org)  
E-mail: [info@livehope.org](mailto:info@livehope.org)

Love in Action  
PO Box 753307, Memphis TN 38175  
901-542-0250

If you make a decision to change your life, call the above numbers, but most importantly go to Jesus for help. Read below how tenderly he helped someone centuries ago turn from sexual sin:

Jesus went unto the Mount of Olives. And the scribes and Pharisees brought unto Him a woman taken in adultery; and when they had set her in the midst, they say unto Him, Master, this woman was taken in adultery, in the very act. Now Moses in the law commanded us, that such should be stoned: but what sayest thou? This they said, tempting Him, but Jesus stooped down, and with His finger wrote on the ground, as though He heard them not. So when they continued asking Him, He lifted up himself, and said unto them, He that is without sin among you, let him cast the first stone. And again He stooped down, and wrote on the ground. And they which heard it, being convicted by their own conscience, went out one by one, even unto the last: and Jesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midst. When Jesus had lifted up himself, and saw none but the woman, He

said unto her, Woman, where are your accusers? Hath no man condemned thee? She said, No man, Lord. And Jesus said unto her, Neither do I condemn thee: go, and sin no more. Then spoke Jesus again unto them, saying, I am the light of the world: he that followeth me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life. (From John 8:1-12)

Sexual sin is a difficult temptation. *The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgment to be punished: (2 Peter 2:9). God refuses no one that comes to him, and will reward you if you turn to him and become victorious over any temptation: *Blessed is the man that endureth temptation: for when he is tried, he shall receive the crown of life, which the Lord hath promised to them that love him.* (James 1:12).*

Why not give your life to Christ? Pray to Him, “Dear God, I am a human whose sins condemn me no worse than any other. I know Jesus died to pay the price for my sins, as much as any other. I ask that Jesus enters into my heart and my life to be my Savior. Thank you for saving me from my sins. I commit my life to you. Please help me live as you want me to. In Jesus name, Amen.”

## Chapter 8. Till Death Do Us Part



And the Lord God said, It is not good that the man should be alone; I will make him an help meet for him. And the Lord God caused a deep sleep to fall upon Adam, and he slept: and he took one of his ribs, and closed up the flesh instead thereof; And the rib, which the Lord God had taken from man, made he a woman, and brought her unto the man. And Adam said, This is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh: she shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of Man. Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh. (Genesis 2:18, 21-24)

### WHY MARRIAGE?

Some people oversimplify. When a child asks, “May I do this?” You say, “No. Why? Cause. Why because?” What if the pastor would do that? Imagine going to church, and the pastor says, “Don’t lust or commit adultery. If you think you have to have sex, marry the person. Oh, and make sure the person is a believer. You may not be unequally yoked with a non-believer.” Someone in the back of the congregation shouts, Why, Pastor?” The Pastor says, “Cause. Cause why, Pastor? Cause the Good Book says so. Now let’s sing a hymn and we’ll get you all home 45 minutes early.”

Fortunately, the pastors, who are well educated and have all week to think-up something to say, get more deeply involved. Besides, we are too inquisitive. We also like to sin too much, so we need lots of “talking to.” (“Maybe he isn’t talking about me.”) The pastor reads you a big passage of scripture that tells you why adultery is sin. If that is not bad enough, then he says, “Now turn with me to Second Peter.” He hop-Scotches you all through the New Testament *and*

Old Testament until you have a good idea that God means “NO” to adultery, Old Testament, New Testament, past, present, and future. And you know God *is* talking about *you*.

God made sexual relations pleasurable for us. It is for the pleasure of a married couple joined in union by God for the purposes God intended. The scriptures are quite clear on this. Because this relationship is so pleasurable, it is the most desirable of sins. It is said that prostitution is the oldest profession. At any rate, God, being omniscient, has the wisdom to think it prudent to devote much scripture to instruct us in the area of proper sex. The most important point, sex is only for enjoyment *within a marriage*.

## PROPER MARITAL RELATIONSHIPS

The following scriptures all require honorable relationships between husband and wife. The husband is to honor his wife; the wife is to honor her husband. They are to be of one flesh. God sanctifies the marriages of believers. No one is to come between them. He who comes between them sins against God:

<sup>22</sup>Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as unto the Lord. <sup>23</sup>For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the church: and he is the saviour of the body. <sup>24</sup>Therefore as the church is subject unto Christ, so let the wives be to their own husbands in every thing. <sup>25</sup>Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it; <sup>26</sup>That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word, <sup>27</sup>That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish. <sup>28</sup>So ought men to love their wives as their own bodies. He that loveth his wife loveth himself. <sup>29</sup>For no man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourisheth and cherisheth it, even as the Lord the church: <sup>30</sup>For we are members of his body, of his flesh, and of his bones. <sup>31</sup>For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joined unto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh. <sup>32</sup>This is a great mystery: but I speak concerning Christ and the church. <sup>33</sup>Nevertheless let every one of you in particular so love his wife even as himself; and the wife see that she reverence her husband. (Ephesians 5:22-33)

<sup>6</sup>But from the beginning of the creation God made them male and female. <sup>7</sup>For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and cleave to his wife; <sup>8</sup>And they twain shall be one flesh: so then they are no more twain, but one flesh. <sup>9</sup>What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder. (Mark 10:6-9)

Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as it is fit in the Lord. Husbands, love your wives, and be not bitter against them. (Colossians 3:18-19)

<sup>1</sup>Likewise, ye wives, be in subjection to your own husbands; that, if any obey not the word, they also may without the word be won by the conversation of the wives; <sup>7</sup>Likewise, ye husbands, dwell with them according to knowledge, giving honour unto the wife, as unto the weaker vessel, and as being heirs together of the grace of life; that your prayers be not hindered. (1 Peter 3:1, 7)

Marriage is honourable in all, and the bed undefiled: but whoremongers and adulterers God will judge. (Hebrews 13:4)

Another point not to miss: the husband is to be the head of the family *in religious matters* as Christ is the head of the Church. In this the wife is to be submissive. *In this the husband is to take action in leading his family in fellowship with God.*

Christian couples, do not expect smooth sailing just because you are in God's family. It is wonderful that you can turn to God; but, be aware of the wiles of the devil, and be prepared to ask for help when you need it. *Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour:* (1 Peter 5:8). What does Satan enjoy more than creating strife in happy Christian couples or in evangelizing churches? Your happy marriage might take work to keep it happy. The happiness is your choice.

If you have rough spots, recognize them, and then take them to God. Do not yield to weaknesses of the flesh. Prayer is your weapon; use it at the first temptation. If your marriage needs help, take it to your pastor or a Christian counselor. Your solution is found within the scriptures. And most of all *save your marriage because your marriage is worth saving.*

## WHY DIVORCE?

We Americans are spoiled with our land-of-plenty-get-anything-we-want. We trade cars at the drop of a hat. We buy a bigger house. We put in a pool. We fill in the pool and make a flower garden and spa. Do we get tired of our spouses and trade them in on a newer model? Maybe one with more money or brighter lipstick? Is that why we have the highest divorce rate in the world?

I hope those reasons are just me being silly. I really do not know the answer and do not know if anyone does know why America, largely Judeo-Christian, has such a high divorce rate. Perhaps divorces are so easy to get, and are easier to get than the work required saving a marriage. Maybe we do not get married for the right reasons. Once my father told me "Mom is my best friend" (author's mother). When Dad said that they had been married approximately 40 years. I thought that was unique, and sweet. Years later I realized that the same thing had happened to me. Is that because Jeanne and I married for the right reasons, because we took any problems to God, or simply because our original goal of staying married stayed our goal?

Why does that not work for everyone? What are the major reasons for divorce? Typical grounds have included adultery; desertion; habitual drunkenness; conviction of a felony (and subsequent incarceration); and, cruel and inhuman treatment. According to the scriptures, we are not supposed to do these things to begin with. If the people that get divorced for these reasons would have followed God's will to begin with, the point would be moot, or more practically, there would be far fewer divorces.

The divorce rates are not getting any better. In fact, the statistics show a sad trend. In the United States from 1920 through 1965, the divorce rate increased from 2 per 1000 population to 3, up by 50%. In the shorter period from 1965 through 1995, the rate went up another 50%. Americans exceed our closest "statistical rival," Cuba, by 16%. We exceed Canada by 65%. Our rate of 4.3 more than doubles Germany and nearly triples Israel. The past few years the rate

dropped off slightly; but the statistics are biased by the great popularity of “living together.” Break-ups of live-in relationships do not figure into the national divorce statistics.

We are obviously “doing it all wrong.” We are not paying attention to God’s rules. We are following man’s rules. We are following the law of “We evolved, we don’t need God, forget Genesis, forget the Bible, if it feels good do it.” I tell you it feels good because God made it, God ordained it, but unfortunately it feels good when you do it wrong. If you make the mistake of fleeting pleasure, can you live with yourself? God ordained marriage, and said, “Thou shalt not commit adultery.” Period.

## WHAT CONSTITUTES ADULTERY?

Thou shalt not lie carnally with thy neighbor’s wife (Leviticus 18:20).

It is a “no-brainer” that thou shalt not covet thy neighbor’s wife (The Ten Commandments), and the same again in Leviticus chapter 18. But there are other ways of committing this sin:

<sup>10</sup>And in the house his disciples asked him again of the same matter. <sup>11</sup>And he saith unto them, Whosoever shall put away his wife, and marry another, committeth adultery against her. <sup>12</sup>And if a woman shall put away her husband, and be married to another, she committeth adultery. (Mark 10:10-12)

<sup>27</sup>Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery: <sup>28</sup>But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart. <sup>31</sup>It hath been said, Whosoever shall put away his wife, let him give her a writing of divorcement: <sup>32</sup>But I say unto you, That whosoever shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, causeth her to commit adultery: and whosoever shall marry her that is divorced committeth adultery. (Matthew 5:27-28, 31-32)

If you get divorced, and marry another, you commit adultery. This logic follows Matthew 5. If you are single, never married, and marry a divorced person, by induced reasoning from verse 32, you commit adultery. God binds one that is divorced until their first partner dies. Note in Matthew 5:28 that if you look on (the opposite sex) in lust you have already committed adultery in your heart. These are God’s rules. Man’s rules differ.

## SIN UNTO DEATH

There is Sin Unto Death described by Jesus that appears to be directed toward sin (blasphemy) against the Holy Spirit. Could this Sin Unto Death go beyond blasphemy?

If you divorce or marry a divorced person after you have become a believer, you are technically knowingly, continually sinning. Jesus Christ’s words: *There is a sin unto death: I do not say that he shall pray for it.* (1 John 5:16b). If one does not repent of this sin, he could be chastened. Paul’s words: *Wherefore whosoever shall eat this bread, and drink this cup of the Lord, unworthily, shall be guilty of the body and blood of the Lord. But let a man examine*

*himself, and so let him eat of that bread, and drink of that cup. For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh damnation to himself, not discerning the Lord's body. For this cause many are weak and sickly among you, and many sleep. (1 Corinthians 11:27-30).*

Neglect of this chastening can result in physical death. Paul: *It is reported commonly that there is fornication among you, and such fornication as is not so much as named among the Gentiles, that one should have his father's wife. And ye are puffed up, and have not rather mourned, that he that hath done this deed might be taken away from among you. For I verily, as absent in body, but present in spirit, have judged already, as though I were present, concerning him that hath so done this deed, In the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, when ye are gathered together, and my spirit, with the power of our Lord Jesus Christ, To deliver such an one unto Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus. Your glorying is not good. Know ye not that a little leaven leaveneth the whole lump? Purge out therefore the old leaven, that ye may be a new lump, as ye are unleavened. For even Christ our passover is sacrificed for us: (1 Corinthians 5:1-7).*

## WHAT IS LUST?

Lust: “desire for indulgence of sex, especially excessive sexual desire,” from the World Book Dictionary. Different than adultery in that lust is “thinking about it” rather than doing it. But remember Christ’s words (for the third time this chapter), “*But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart.*” (Matthew 5:28). It sounds like Jesus made a big deal out of one person thinking another looks cute, well more than cute. There is no gray with God. It is right or wrong, so “lusting,” which is “lusting of adultery” is wrong, which makes it a sin.

For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world. And the world passeth away, and the lust thereof: but he that doeth the will of God abideth for ever. (1 John 2:16-17)

For this is the will of God, even your sanctification, that ye should abstain from fornication: (1 Thessalonians 4:3)

Here is a more descript reference from Leviticus 18:20-24: *thou shalt not lie carnally with thy neighbour's wife. And thou shalt not let any of thy seed pass through the fire to Molech, neither shalt thou profane the name of thy God: I am the Lord. Thou shalt not lie with mankind, as with womankind: it is abomination. Neither shalt thou lie with any beast to defile thyself therewith: neither shall any woman stand before a beast to lie down thereto: it is confusion. Defile not ye yourselves in any of these things: for in all these the nations are defiled which I cast out before you: (Molech was a god of the Ammonites to whom children were sacrificed by fire).*

I examined every verse in the Kings James Version in which the word “lust” appears. In every instance, the context is that of a “bad” word. Lust is something we must conquer.

## LUST RESEARCH

If you would like to learn more from in-depth information on lust as well as explicit color photos, you might try the elementary school library. Many libraries' computers are connected to the Internet with no restrictions. Your friendly civil liberties watchdogs are trying to keep it that way. There is a federal law soon to be in effect that will block certain grants from libraries that do not install computer-filtering software that block obscene material. This we hope will limit the pornography available to children.

My wife is a library assistant at a public elementary school. When researching via the Internet, pornographic material routinely appears on her screen in response to certain key words. Recently, one such incident resulted from searching "jaguar."

What being might be behind a movement of valiant attorneys and volunteers that fight so hard to make sure our children are not forced to see something like the Bible? Who might be so opposed to tender little children not learning the Ten Commandments? Is it not wonderful that this entity fights so hard for the rights of our children so that they can see explicit photographs?

## HOW TO DEFEAT LUST

You might vow to never lust again. You cannot guarantee to keep that vow any more than many other sins. You might be more successful at "thou shalt not steal." A different part of the brain controls that sin. Most of us are good at "thou shalt not kill." But you know it is impossible to avoid all sin, no matter how much willpower you have. Eventually, you will see someone of the opposite sex, think that person looks wonderful, covet that person, and lie to your spouse, "I didn't look," and sin deeper and deeper. At least the lying part might break the chain of lust.

Through prayer *ahead of time*, ask God to help you avoid lust. Quickly look away from the first glimpse of a problem, be mentally prepared to put it out of your mind, and pray during the moment and afterward. Why would you pray ahead of time? For the same reason that you ask for safety ahead of time. You would not ask God to supernaturally repair your car after an accident because you forgot to ask for safety beforehand.

You can only beat lust through prayer and fellowship with God:

Submit yourselves therefore to God. Resist the devil, and he will flee from you. Draw nigh to God, and he will draw nigh to you. Cleanse your hands, ye sinners; and purify your hearts, ye double minded. (James 4:7-8)

<sup>13a</sup>Now the body is not for fornication, but for the Lord; and the Lord for the body. <sup>18</sup>Flee fornication. Every sin that a man doeth is without the body; but he that committeth fornication sinneth against his own body. <sup>19</sup>What? know ye not that your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost which is in you, which ye have of God, and ye are not your own? (1 Corinthians 6:13b, 18-19)

This I say then, Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh. For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would. (Galatians 5:16-17)

The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgment to be punished: (2 Peter 2:9)

Blessed is the man that endureth temptation: for when he is tried, he shall receive the crown of life, which the Lord hath promised to them that love him. (James 1:12)

For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world. And the world passeth away, and the lust thereof: but he that doeth the will of God abideth forever. (1 John 2:16-17)

When you read the words of the Bible, it is very apparent that God knows how difficult our temptations are, especially temptations of the flesh. Look how much more scripture deals with sexual sin than other sins. But you see how wonderful God is, right? God describes a righteous life for us. He prescribes a righteous life for us. Then God sends His Son Jesus to conquer the very world for us that is causing our sin. In the Lord's words, "*These things I have spoken unto you, that in me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world.*" (John 16:33)

We do not have to perish due to sexual sin, be it lust or adultery, or homosexuality. As God has given us the power to be His and to defeat our fate of death, so He gives us the power to defeat sins of the flesh. (*But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name:* (John 1:12). Praise God that He loves us and wants us to be saved from our sins, even from the wicked sins of the flesh. Jesus met a woman at a well. He could have spoken to more-upright townspeople; but he picked an adulteress to whom to reveal that He is the Messiah. Jesus came to save her!

Jesus came to save you, too! You might not be an adulterer, so much the better. But even if you are a prostitute or a thief on a cross, Jesus will save you and prepare a mansion for you in Heaven that will be grander than any ever seen on earth. Is He knocking at your door? Open the door and let Him in. Pray "Dear Father in Heaven, I confess I am a sinner who without your redemption is lost. I ask that Jesus come into my heart to be my Savior this very moment. I ask that Jesus takes control of my life and help me to avoid sin, though I know you are there to forgive me in my failures. Thank you for saving my soul and making me new and whole. In Jesus precious name I ask this, Amen."

## Chapter 9. How Many Skin Colors Are There?

**Jesus said unto him, thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself. MATTHEW 22:37,39.**

***God that made the world and all things therein, seeing that he is Lord of heaven and earth, dwelleth not in temples made with hands; Neither is worshipped with men's hands, as though he needed any thing, seeing he giveth to all life, and breath, and all things; And hath made of one blood all nations of men for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation; That they should seek the Lord, if haply they might feel after him, and find him, though he be not far from every one of us: For in him we live, and move, and have our being; as certain also of your own poets have said, For we are also his offspring. (Acts 17:24-28)***

The words, or similar, that I heard on a television documentary were, “We represent the ‘White Race’ and the church of Jesus Christ. We are at war with the (African-Americans) and the Jews. White power! White power!” Camouflage-clad “White Americans” from a camp somewhere in a forest spoke this. Thank you White Supremacists and Ku Klux Klan for showing us the way! How would the rest of us know who to hate and what Jesus wants us to do if it were not for you telling us? Would we have to read His Word and hope to find it on our own? Your guarded perimeters are novel, though. We welcome more people to our churches with open arms.

Help me sort this out. All of us that love the Lord should buy guns, army fatigues, and start a cult. Then we set up camp, build fences, and keep the “undesirables” out. Then we pray as hard as we can to God for guidance:

“Lord, we call upon you for wisdom. We know that your only begotten Son was a Jew. We know from the Good Book, John 1:11, that He came first unto his own. We realize that since He was born in the Middle East, He most likely had darker skin than we have, and brown eyes. And Lord, we know He spoke Aramaic, but only because the English language was not formed yet. We also are mindful that the first Christians were Jews, and that we might be their descendents. (Time out, God. Hey guys, why is it that we do not like Jews?) Anyhow God, we still have all those other people with dark skin that Jesus would not want us to like. They have no place in your Kingdom. (Time out again, God. Guys, what about the New Testament and the Ethiopians, and the Jews that are God’s chosen people and are darker than us? Should blonde, blue eyed, fair complexioned Scandinavians hate us? What about Africans that love Jesus?) We are back, God. We surely want to hate someone for your sake. We will erect signs to keep them out of our camp. We will prophecy death to their race in your name. Lord, please lead us to the enemy.”

That mock prayer, of course, was to make a point; but was it far from fact as to why people hate? The real issue of this chapter is to review all of the genetic differences between the races, the different skin colors, and so forth that establish all the races of the world. Some of the racial differences were punishment from God, Ham for example. In the end it is unimportant.

Remember the words from the children’s song, “Red and yellow, black and white, they are precious in His sight.” I suppose we will all be the proper color in Heaven. Hold on, I am not done having my fun with mockery!

What if I told you there is very small genetic difference between a seven-foot African, a six-foot Caucasian, and a five-foot Oriental? How about if I told you there are less than four skin colors? Less than three? Less than two? Adam and Eve probably had the “proper” skin color. What color was it? I bet there are fewer races than you think. Read on, and I will repeat a remark by a very brilliant individual commenting on the possible language spoken in Heaven.

**HOW MANY SKIN COLORS ARE THERE?**

When I learned the answer to this question I was astonished. I was so happy with the answer and my new-found wisdom that at every opportunity I would ask anyone a shade different than me, “Do you know how many skin colors there are? Probably the only thing that kept me from getting beat up is I look somewhat harmless, plus I suppose I caught them off guard.

The first that I heard the question of “how many skin colors” was the first time I heard a creation scientist speak in person, Dr. Gary Parker. When he asked the question, some “dummy” up front held up one finger. Well, that turned out to be the correct answer. What? Dr. Parker told us that we all have one skin color, colored by melanin. Our genes cause some of us to have more melanin than others, so some are darker, some lighter, in varying shades. The only exceptions are albinos, who have no melanin.

Melanin is also what colors our hair and eyes. You might recall from school a little lesson in heredity involving the eyes. Big B is “brown,” little b is “blue.” You inherit one B or b from each parent. Brown is dominant. If you inherit BB or Bb, you will have brown eyes. If you inherit bb, you will have blue eyes. Chalk up variations to design.

With skin, we each have four genes, represented by upper and lower case A and B, Ababa for example. ABABA would be darkest, alb lightest. The sixteen-square chart below shows five possible shades, but skin thickness and the fat beneath the skin can vary this somewhat further:

	<b>AB</b>	<b>Ab</b>	<b>ab</b>	<b>ab</b>
<b>AB</b>	<b>AABB</b>	<b>AABb</b>	<b>AaBB</b>	<b>AaBb</b>
<b>Ab</b>	<b>AABb</b>	<b>AAbb</b>	<b>AaBb</b>	<b>Aabb</b>
<b>aB</b>	<b>AaBB</b>	<b>AaBb</b>	<b>aaBB</b>	<b>aaBb</b>
<b>ab</b>	<b>AaBb</b>	<b>Aabb</b>	<b>aaBb</b>	<b>aabb</b>

Earlier I made a supposition that Adam and Eve most likely had the “proper” skin color. It is probable that they both had something similar to AaBb genes. Two parents with those combinations could literally produce all 5 shade variations.

## SO WHERE DID ALL THE “SHADES” COME FROM?

The above chart shows how shades of light through dark can happen. It is a matter of DNA programming created by God from the beginning. Why? How?

Scientists agree on variety within kind regardless if their religion is evolution or the Living God. In the dog family for example, the consensus is that all canines today came from an original wolf-like animal. Packs of these canines became isolated in different geographical areas. Over time they encountered different climates, food sources, competition, interaction with humans, and reduced gene pools. Variety began to occur. This is not evolution, this is variety allowed by the genes God gave them. Further, man has taken the dog kinds and bred them for special features, creating all the breeds we have today. (Does this not show a wondrous Creator, programming so much variation into just one original kind?)

The same scenario happened with skin shade (not color) as with dog varieties. Different peoples experienced the same differences in nature as the canines. Some situations favored lighter skin, some favored darker. Now this is a departing point on “variety:” Some evolutionists believe dark skin evolved as a need; creationists believe the dark genes were there from the beginning. In hot, sunny climates, the lighter genes were less in favor and eventually were largely eliminated. The reverse would happen in Scandinavia where lighter skin colors would be needed to allow adequate vitamin D production. In Africa, darker skin would be needed to avoid skin cancer. Those traits would be favored and become dominant in the end.

So, it was God that created or caused all of the skin shades, which was done to protect us all. What about the curse of Ham? We all have heard that God cursed Ham and made his skin dark so that he and his descendents would be in disfavor, and abused by the rest of the world.

## CURSE OF HAM

<sup>20</sup>And Noah...planted a vineyard: <sup>21</sup>And he drank of the wine, and was drunken; and he was uncovered within his tent. <sup>22</sup>And Ham, the father of Canaan, saw the nakedness of his father, and told his two brethren without. <sup>23</sup>And Shem and Japheth took a garment, and laid it upon both their shoulders, and went backward, and covered the nakedness of their father; and their faces were backward, and they saw not their father's nakedness. <sup>24</sup>And Noah awoke from his wine, and knew what his younger son had done unto him. <sup>25</sup>And he said, **Cursed be Canaan; a servant of servants shall he be unto his brethren.** <sup>26</sup>And he said, Blessed be the Lord God of Shem; and Canaan shall be his servant. <sup>27</sup>God shall enlarge Japheth, and he shall dwell in the tents of Shem; and Canaan shall be his servant. (Genesis 9:20-27)

Most of us believe that Ham was cursed, and that because of this curse, when Noah said “Cursed be Canaan; a servant of servants shall he be unto his brethren,” that Canaan’s descendents were dark skinned. This was a convenient belief for white people who thought dark skinned people were lesser and sanctioned by God to be slaves. Although it was Ham that sinned, *Canaan’s descendents* were cursed. Nowhere is skin color or anything else physical mentioned.

I never heard of a “dark skin curse” from my parents or any church. I did hear it from other sources and formerly regarded it as a “common knowledge” fact. The answer to the question of this curse, found in Genesis 9, is found in Genesis 10:

<sup>15</sup>And Canaan begat Sidon his firstborn, and Heth, <sup>16</sup>And the Jebusite, and the Amorite, and the Girgasite, <sup>17</sup>And the Hivite, and the Arkite, and the Sinite, <sup>18</sup>And the Arvadite, and the Zemarite, and the Hamathite: and afterward were the families of **the Canaanites spread abroad.** <sup>19</sup>**And the border of the Canaanites was from Sidon, as thou comest to Gerar, unto Gaza; as thou goest, unto Sodom, and Gomorrah, and Admah, and Zeboim, even unto Lasha.** (Genesis 10:15-19)

One’s descendents being destined to die by a rain of fire in the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah is a bad curse! God by his omniscience and foreknowledge knew this to be their fate, though they had free will. Our sin in this is to assume that dark skin is “bad.” In any event, God created dark skin, light skin, and medium skin, *And God saw every thing that He had made, and, behold, it was very good.* (Genesis 1:31).

#### MORE SIN & CONFOUNDED LANGUAGE

<sup>1</sup>And the whole earth was of one language, and of one speech. <sup>2</sup>And it came to pass, as they journeyed...they found a plain...and they dwelt there. <sup>3</sup>And they said one to another, Go to, let us make brick, and...mortar. <sup>4</sup>And they said, Go to, let us build us a city and a tower, whose top may reach unto heaven; and let us make us a name, lest we be scattered abroad upon the face of the whole earth. <sup>5</sup>And the Lord came down to see the city and the tower, which the children of men builded. <sup>6</sup>And the Lord said, Behold, the people is one, and they have all one language; and this they begin to do: and now nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do. <sup>7</sup>Go to, let us go down, and there confound their language, that they may not understand one another's speech. <sup>8</sup>So the Lord scattered them abroad from thence upon the face of all the earth: and they left off to build the city. <sup>9</sup>Therefore is the name of it called Babel; because the Lord did there confound the language of all the earth: and from thence did the Lord scatter them abroad upon the face of all the earth. (Genesis 11:1-9)

Chalk up another one for man’s sin. To this point in the Bible, God created a perfect universe *ex nihilo* (out of nothing). Man sinned. God tossed Adam and Eve out of Eden. Man continued to sin, so God destroyed everything that breathed, except for what He put on an ark. After that, He had to destroy two wicked cities with a rain of fire. Next and last to that point, God had to confound language to get us to slow down our wicked, and now scheming ways. Would we learn?

I made a bold claim a few pages ago that I could repeat a remark from a noted authority as to what language might be spoken in Heaven. Here goes. In Ken Ham’s opening remarks to a large group that came to hear him and Dr. Werner Gitt, he told the audience that his accent is

Australian, that we better get used to it, it's what we'd be hearing in Heaven. Of course, that worked well to serve its purpose of loosening up the audience; but, why not?

## THE DAYS OF PELEG

And unto Eber were born two sons: the name of one was Peleg; for (because) in his days was the earth divided; [Peleg- literally, division] (Genesis 10:25; 1 Chronicles 1:19)

If one examines a globe, it is not too difficult to imagine disassembly of the globe with a razor, and reassembly in a fashion whereby all of the continents interlock. There is much scientific evidence for this. Well, not that God carved the earth with a razor, but that the continents once were interlocked. My opinion is that this arrangement certainly existed at one time. I do not think that the why, how, and when matter that much to this chapter. If you care to look into this topic, search “continental drift” and “plate tectonics.” Be sure to include *The Answers Book* and *The Young Earth* as sources in your search (see Recommended Reading).

There is disagreement among Bible scholars as to whether the reference to Peleg refers to the time of continental drift. One certainty is that there was some type of division of the earth in the days of Peleg. It was important enough to mention in two books of the Old Testament, interestingly with nearly the same wording. Some believe that the division in the days of Peleg was the formation of rivers and possibly other physical boundaries that further divided the inhabitants on earth rather than continental drift, which perhaps occurred prior to this.

At any rate, the division was another means for God to scatter us. This was not necessarily a punishment. If it were, my belief is that more detail would be given in the Bible. This might well have been part of the original plan to disperse the population as we grew in God's command to “multiply and fill the earth.” The result of the division was further diversification of people groups and within the animal kinds. It apparently worked; look at us now!

## IF ONLY ONE SKIN COLOR, HOW MANY RACES?

And hath made of one blood all nations of men to dwell on all the face of the earth  
(Acts 17:26)

There is more to “race” than color, right? I remember very well singing “Red and Yellow, Black and White...” Let us assume for the sake of argument that there are four races and four skin colors. Take a piece of paper the “color” of your skin and hold it next to your skin. It is not red, yellow, black, or white, is it? Is it some kind of a brown shade?

From the Bible we are taught that we all came from Adam through Noah. The evolutionists are now “seeing the light” that we all came from an “Eve” in Africa. So where did we split into “races?” Answer: we did not. Race is our *perception*. To repeat the statistic, there is less than a 1% difference in the DNA make-up between any of us on this earth. Race is not a

concept from God. It seems that for convenience we want to divide God's children into either advanced or disadvantaged groups.

Shame on us, there is only one "race," the Human Race, or better, "God's Race."

## SCIENCE AND RACISM

Racism affects the way scientists think, and the judgment they use when they observe and analyze their findings. The Learning Channel aired "Tracking the First Americans" in April 2001. This program started with the traditional hypothesis that the first Americans came from Asia across the Bering Strait. These early Americans were termed "Mongoloids" on this program, and their origins would agree with possible creationist accounts of how the first Americans arrived after the Noahic flood.

Where the traditional scientists differ is with what they concluded from human fossils found that they believe predate the "Mongoloids." An ancient skull was found in Brazil and sent to a forensic scientist for reconstruction. The result was an "African" looking human. This created problems for the scientists. How does one account for African features from Mongoloids?

The scientists ultimately concluded that the earliest Americans were not the Mongoloids, but were aboriginal, having most likely sailed from Australia. Later, the Mongoloids encroached from the north and conquered the aboriginals.

A Biblical creationist might have a simpler story for the "aboriginal" Americans. The antediluvian world was different. Man replenished the earth prior to the flood as commanded by God. We cannot know how the gene pool was spread during that time. What looks African now could have been South American then (we don't and can't even know how the continents were before the flood). The ancient skull was most likely from someone that died before the flood or possibly that perished in the flood. So the Americas were replenished first by one people-group before the flood, then another after the flood. The answer is simple when you look to the Bible.

## "INTERRACIAL" MARRIAGE AND THE BIBLE

<sup>14</sup>Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? and what communion hath light with darkness? <sup>15</sup>And what concord hath Christ with Belial? or what part hath he that believeth with an infidel? <sup>16</sup>And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people. <sup>17</sup>Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you. (2 Corinthians 6:14-17)

This is a real problem, right? The Word of God tells us that we are all of one blood. Also, by logical deduction from science and the Bible there are no different races. So how do we handle making sure that our children do not do "the wrong thing" and marry out of their "color?" We know how wrong those kind of marriages are. I have researched both the scriptures and my

library of Biblical references. I am prepared to summarize the answer for you so that you can step in if needed to prevent the mistakes of young people in the future.

All of the searching comes down to two Bible verses: 2 Corinthians 6:14 and Acts 17:26: Do not marry unbelievers, and we are all of one blood. Therefore, you are safe following these guidelines:

	Male Light skin non-Christian	Male Light Skin Christian	Male Asian non-Christian	Male Asian Christian	Male African non-Christ.	Male African Christian
Female Light skin non-Christ.	Irrelevant		Irrelevant		Irrelevant	
Female Light Skin Christian						
Female Asian non-Christ.	Irrelevant		Irrelevant		Irrelevant	
Female Asian Christian						
Female African non-Christ.	Irrelevant		Irrelevant		Irrelevant	
Female African Christian						

Do you see the pattern? Everywhere that the grid intersects on Christians, the Bible, regardless of either partner’s “roots,” sanctions that marriage. Where Christian and non-Christian intersect, there is a frowning face, because Christians are not to be “unequally yoked with non-believers.” Every other intersection does not matter.

Do not assume that a Christian can marry a non-Christian and win him over. Imagine a Christian standing on a table, represented this way due to their elevated relationship with God. His or her non-believer spouse is standing on the floor. No matter how strong a Christian you are, it is much easier for the weaker to pull you down from the table than for you to pull the weaker one up onto the table.

Earlier in this chapter I mentioned that I like to take my newfound knowledge and share it with people that have more melanin than me. I remember one incident very well. While shopping at an outlet mall, I met a striking young lady employed by one of the stores. Her parents had emigrated from Nigeria. We discussed my “one skin color” routine and then a little about each other’s personal life. She has a very dark skin shade. Her husband is of Scandinavian descent with fair hair and complexion. She joked that their children will be “swirled.” Based on my impression of her, they are most likely a lovely Christian couple. The shame of it is that they probably attract negative attention when together in public based on non-Biblical, prejudiced views, yet their marriage is one sanctioned by God. Let us look at hearts and souls.

## PREJUDICE

“Praise Him, Praise Him, Jesus our blessed Redeemer...” This hymn is the one that comes to mind when I remember C.J. Smith accompanying our singing with his trumpet during Sunday evening services. I was probably a young teenager. The trumpet sounded beautiful along with the organ and piano. I remember Smitty in a black suit. In fact, most of the men wore dark suits and all looked similar; Christian men in dark suits. They were all equals as far as I was concerned, and always treated as equals by my parents in word and deed, and why not.

As I grew older and got around town more, I began seeing the men in their secular jobs. Some of them looked exactly as they did on Sundays. As executives, that was their required attire. I saw some of the men dressed far differently. Some did maintenance work, utility work, worked in a factory, and so on. The different wardrobe seemed strange to me because I was accustomed to seeing them in suits. My father did a little bit of everything in a family-owned furniture store. I remember Dad favoring plaid sport shirts and navy blue trousers.

These men all looked the same at church, and all that were Christians *were* the same. During the week they were still Christians, they perhaps looked different, but they were all the same. This world would be prejudiced against one group or the other based on social standards, the poor against the rich, and the rich against the poor. How foolish! In Heaven I am sure that God has selected but one wardrobe for the saints. We should think no differently of others based on earthly yardsticks: *He that loveth his brother abideth in the light, and there is none occasion of stumbling in him.* (1 John 2:10)

## HATE GROUPS

He that despiseth his neighbour sinneth: but he that hath mercy on the poor, happy is he. (Proverbs 14:21)

Be not hasty in thy spirit to be angry: for anger resteth in the bosom of fools. (Ecclesiastes 7:9)

But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: (Matthew 5:22a)

Wherefore, my beloved brethren, let every man be swift to hear, slow to speak, slow to wrath: (James 1:19)

He that loveth not knoweth not God; for God is love. (1 John 4:8)

The most infamous of American hate groups is the Ku Klux Klan, because of their one-time numbers, public displays, and horrific atrocities. I am unaware of any official counts of individuals who hate “other groups.” Unfortunately, I expect that the membership of the KKK, skinheads, neo-nazis, and other organized hate groups combined are greatly exceeded by a head count of all other “unregistered” American bigots. What are we doing?

How did this scenario develop as far as groups hating blacks, especially in the south: First, Africans are hunted like animals; then we drag them over here, sell them like livestock, and put them into slavery. While totally under our control, we treat them inhumanely. Then we fight a war over them because we do not want to lose them. Before the war started, we formed a “club” called the KKK because we hate them? Satan must be relaxed and settled into cruise control.

The KKK began due to opinion that the Reconstruction governments were hostile to the white South. They also had a racist belief that the blacks had an innate inferiority. Membership was only open to native-born, white, Protestant males, 16 years of age or older. Blacks, Roman Catholics, and Jews were excluded. In fact, they too became targets of hate crimes by the Klan. Our country has also seen, and still sees, hatred and/or discrimination toward other groups: women, Native Americans, homosexuals, Polish, Russian, Italian, Irish, Germans, Swedes, Asians, many religious groups, and more.

In the land of “In God We Trust” we are ignoring God’s Word. We are not following the teachings of Christ, or what God tells us about “racism” in Genesis. We must love one another as God loves us, and do all we can to discourage the hate. Hate crimes laws and penalties are getting tougher and are a step in the right direction. We have a long way to go.

## LOVE GROUPS & ENDING RACISM

We need a grass roots movement of love groups in numbers more than are enlisted in the KKK and other hate armies. Let those who hate, and say they do so in the name of the Lord, hear the Word of God:

But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you; That ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven: (Matthew 5:44-45a)

But love ye your enemies, and do good, and lend, hoping for nothing again; and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be the children of the Highest: for he is kind unto the unthankful and to the evil. Be ye therefore merciful, as your Father also is merciful. Judge not, and ye shall not be judged: condemn not, and ye shall not be condemned: forgive, and ye shall be forgiven: Give, and it shall be given unto you; good measure, pressed down, and shaken together, and running over, shall men give into your bosom. For with the same measure that ye mete withal it shall be measured to you again. (Luke 6:35-38)

Let all bitterness, and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and evil speaking, be put away from you, with all malice: And be ye kind one to another, tenderhearted, forgiving one another, even as God for Christ's sake hath forgiven you. (Ephesians 4:31-32)

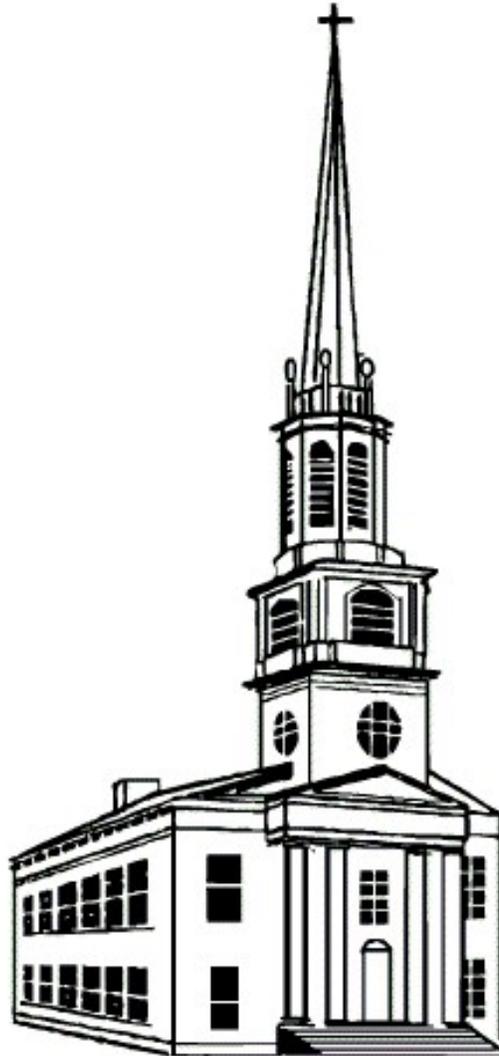
Our movement needs to start with prayer (Matthew 5:44). We need to pray for the hatred to stop; but if we have a little flame of hatred within us, we must start there and extinguish that flame. Remember that only God is worthy to judge us. It is up to us to treat others kindly and to be examples unto them. God will judge the hate and hate activists at the proper time.

You remember the story of the Good Samaritan, who essentially showed love to his enemy. We talk about tolerance. Talking is not enough, and tolerance is not enough. It has been said, though not by God, if we cannot love one another, then we should at least tolerate one another. Jesus said, "Love one another." Tolerance only delays the inevitable. If we can generate genuine love, we are light years ahead.

Something else inevitable is eternity. If you hate any man, turn from your hatred. Jesus will deliver you from any sin or life of sin if you repent. *The Lord is gracious, and full of compassion, slow to anger, and of great mercy.* (Psalm 145:8). He will make you a new creature. That means, if you confess and turn from a life as the most sinful bigot, he will save you and change you. *As far as the east is from the west, so far hath he removed our transgressions from us.* (Psalm 103:12). *Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new.* (2 Corinthians 5:17).

If you want to be a new creature, pray this, "Dear Father in Heaven, I have sinned against you in many ways, including thinking hateful thoughts against others that you love. These dreadful thoughts came because I thought these people were different than me. I know by your Word that we are created equal, in your likeness. Help me to change. I want Jesus to enter my heart, save me from my sins, and make me a new man. Please guide me against the wiles of the devil. Help me to be a beacon to others so that they see Christ in me and my love for others. In Jesus Holy and Precious name we pray, Amen."

## PART III WHERE ARE WE GOING FROM HERE?



Now faith is assurance of things hoped for, a conviction of things not seen. For therein the elders had witness borne to them. By faith we understand that the worlds have been framed by the word of God, so that what is seen hath not been made out of things which appear. Hebrews

11:1-3 ASV

## Chapter 10. Is There an Afterlife?



In my Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, there ye may be also. And whither I go ye know, and the way ye know. Thomas saith unto him, Lord, we know not whither thou goest; and how can we know the way? Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me. (John 14:2-6)

Do you believe in Reincarnation? Do you believe in God? Do you believe in life after death? Is there a Heaven? Is there a hell? Do you believe in angels? What about near-death experiences?

Reincarnation is a trendy, but not new, debate for those who do not really want to deal with the God of the Bible, yet want to be spiritual. The second question, "Do you believe in God," is actually more legitimate because it does not necessarily lead pro-God argument away from the Bible. If you have read this far, you most likely do believe in God, in eternal life after death in Heaven or eternal punishment in hell, in God's Holy angels as ministering spirits, and maybe in near-death experiences.

## THERE IS A HEAVEN

Whether or not any of Noah's ark exists, we do not know. If there is anything remaining, it is then humanly possible to find it and prove the entire flood account using modern forensic science. After all, murders can now be solved from miniscule bits of fibers, DNA, and other matter.

What if a near-death experience (NDE) could somehow be supernaturally recorded and verified beyond any doubt? Suppose the account went like this: "I followed the bright light to an incredibly peaceful and beautiful place. My mother and father met me and took me directly to Jesus. He welcomed me but said, 'It is not your time.' I awoke in the hospital, watched the rerun of my NDE on DVD to verify its accuracy, and am happy to tell you that what you are about to see on the big screen, including the Savior's face, is real." Well of course this is not possible. We hear about NDE's but there is no consensus on the reliability of the accounts.

Since I already believe in God, justification through faith, Heaven, hell, and angels, I do see "proof." I see in nature that it had to be designed by a creator. The creation fits the Biblical account. The need for Christ dying for our sins follows perfectly. Jesus tells us in the preceding scripture that there is a Heaven. The Bible tells us there are angels. My own eyes told me this: The day before my father died, he, his nurse, and I were the only ones in the room. He asked me who else was there. I told him that no one else was in the room. It was obvious to me from his face, Dad saw someone at both sides of the foot-end of his bed. When he died the next day, my mother had been out of the room for a few minutes. When my mother reentered the room, she saw that Dad's face, which had been in so much pain from his cancer, had a little smile.

That account tells me that Jesus' words are true. There is a Heaven. Jesus has gone to prepare a place for those in His flock. Are you in His flock?

The person in this world whom I trust as much as I trust myself is the one ordained by God as one flesh with me, Genesis 2:24. When my wife's father was suffering similarly as my father, Jeanne's observations were similar to mine. Something more astounding was that her father, who had become nearly blind by his illness, indicated by his actions and words that he saw (most likely) angels.

## GOD RULES FROM AND DWELLS IN HEAVEN

Heaven is my throne, and earth is my footstool: what house will ye build me? saith the Lord: or what is the place of my rest? (Acts 7:49)



For ever, O Lord, thy word is settled in heaven. (Psalms 119:89)

Be not rash with thy mouth, and let not thine heart be hasty to utter any thing before God: for God is in heaven, and thou upon earth: therefore let thy words be few. (Ecclesiastes 5:2)

After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. (Matthew 6:9)

For as long as I can remember, I was taught and have believed that “God is everywhere.” Where is everywhere? The more thought put into this question, the more difficult “omnipresence” becomes to understand. My latest theory is that God, in spirit, is totally continuous throughout the universe, perhaps how we might perceive fog as a continuous mist, except that God is physically invisible to us. There is another exception; the fog is limited in size. Does the spirit of God extend infinitely in all directions, beyond the universe? Yes, except there is no end to the universe either. We can say words like “eternity” and “without end,” but we cannot really understand them.

If God is everywhere, and there is no end to “everywhere,” and He is in Heaven, where is Heaven? Where is the throne of God? Heaven is most likely everywhere and God’s throne is in Heaven. (Someday we will know.)

When we humans want to know where something is, our discussion is in a different dimension than talking about God and Heaven. “Q- How do you get to the Creation Museum? A- Exit onto I-75 from the Cincinnati beltway...” Directions to Heaven are different. Heaven is where God is. The throne of God is in Heaven. You get there by faith, not a map.

<sup>3</sup>And there shall be no more curse: but the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it; and his servants shall serve him: <sup>4</sup>And they shall see his face; and his name shall be in their foreheads. (Revelation 22:3-4)

In the book of Revelation, there are many symbolic references. The rule of thumb for understanding Revelation is, if the reference sounds by logic to be symbolic, then it is symbolic. For example, in Rev. 4:7 *And the first beast was like a lion*, the description is “how” it is, not “what” it is. When “the throne of God” is used, common sense tells us it is a throne, not a symbol.

In the Bible, from beginning (Genesis 28:16-17) to end (Revelation’ final chapter), Heaven is referenced as the seat of God. We do not know where it is now, but we know it will be on earth someday. Perhaps Heaven or part of Heaven is on earth now, in another dimension, as the angels and departing souls cannot be seen. But no matter where Heaven is, that is where God’s throne is located, and from where God rules.

## HEAVEN IS PHYSICAL AND JOYOUS

<sup>1</sup>I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea. (*Compare Isaiah 65:17 For, behold, I create new heavens and a new*

*earth: and the former shall not be remembered, nor come into mind.*) <sup>2</sup>And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, <sup>3</sup>And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, and be their God. <sup>4</sup>And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away. <sup>5</sup>And he that sat upon the throne said, Behold, I make all things new. And he said unto me, Write: for these words are true and faithful. <sup>6</sup>And he said unto me, It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. I will give unto him that is athirst of the fountain of the water of life freely. <sup>7</sup>He that overcometh shall inherit all things; and I will be his God, and he shall be my son. <sup>8</sup>But the unbelieving shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death. <sup>9</sup>And there came unto me one of the seven angels saying, Come hither, I will shew thee the Lamb's wife. <sup>10</sup>And he carried me away in the spirit to a great and high mountain, and shewed me that great city, the holy Jerusalem, descending out of heaven from God, <sup>11</sup>Having the glory of God: and her light was like unto a stone most precious, even like a jasper stone, clear as crystal; <sup>12</sup>And had a wall great and high, and had twelve gates, and at the gates twelve angels, and names written thereon, which are the names of the twelve tribes of Israel: <sup>14</sup>And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and in them the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb. <sup>16</sup>And he measured the city with the reed, twelve thousand furlongs. The length and the breadth and the height of it are equal. <sup>17</sup>And he measured the wall thereof, an hundred and forty and four cubits, according to the measure of a man, that is, of the angel. <sup>18</sup>And the building of the wall of it was of jasper: and the city was pure gold, like unto clear glass. <sup>19</sup>And the foundations of the wall of the city were garnished with precious stones. The first foundation was jasper; the second, sapphire; the third, chalcedony; the fourth, emerald; <sup>20</sup>The fifth, sardonyx; the sixth, sardius; the seventh, chrysolite; the eighth, beryl; the ninth, topaz; the tenth, chrysoprasus; the eleventh, jacinth; the twelfth, amethyst. <sup>21</sup>And the twelve gates were twelve pearls: every gate was of one pearl: and the street of the city was pure gold, as it were transparent glass. <sup>22</sup>And I saw no temple therein: for the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are the temple of it. <sup>23</sup>And the city had no need of the sun, neither of the moon, to shine in it: for the glory of God did lighten it, and the Lamb is the light thereof. <sup>24</sup>And the nations of them which are saved shall walk in the light of it: and the kings of the earth do bring their glory and honour into it. <sup>25</sup>And the gates of it shall not be shut at all by day: for there shall be no night there. <sup>26</sup>And they shall bring the glory and honour of the nations into it. <sup>27</sup>And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defileth, neither whatsoever worketh abomination, or maketh a lie: but they which are written in the Lamb's book of life. <sup>1</sup>And he shewed me a pure river of water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding out of the throne of God and of the Lamb. <sup>2</sup>In the midst of the street of it, and on either side of the river, was there the tree of life, which bare twelve manner of fruits, and yielded her fruit every month: and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations. <sup>3</sup>And there shall be no more curse: but the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it; and his servants shall serve him: <sup>4</sup>And they shall see his face; and his name shall be in their foreheads. <sup>5</sup>And there shall be no night there; and they need no candle, neither light of the sun; for the Lord God giveth them light: and they shall reign for ever and ever. <sup>20</sup>He which testifieth these things saith, Surely I come quickly. Amen. Even so, come, Lord Jesus. (Condensed from Revelation 21:1-27, 22:1-5,20)

I am not sure what most of those gemstones look like, but the New Jerusalem sounds beautiful. Being such a nature lover, I imagine I would enjoy some time outside of the city

among the trees and other lush vegetation. I will not need to worry about poison ivy for the first ever (and for ever) and there will be no weeds, mosquitoes, and all of the other annoyances brought into this world by sin. Of course how wonderful to return to the city illuminated by the presence of God.

Heaven is definitely described as a physical place in the Revelation account. There is no symbolism here. Jesus spoke of preparing places for us. We will have new, physical, incorruptible bodies, which would only be necessary in a physical place:

<sup>51</sup>Behold, I shew you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, <sup>52</sup>In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. <sup>53</sup>For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality. <sup>54</sup>So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory. <sup>55</sup>O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory? (1 Corinthians 15:51-55)

What joy to never have illness again! Think of all you have suffered so far on this earth. It will not happen in Heaven. Are there any diseases you do not dread, cancer, diabetes, heart disease, and so on? There is no *fear* of disease in Heaven. There will be much other joy:

Thou wilt shew me the path of life: in thy presence is fulness of joy; at thy right hand there are pleasures for evermore. (Psalms 16:11)

Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you. (Matthew 5:12)

Do you like to sing? The inheritors of Heaven will sing the most beautiful, joyous music ever, forever. Imagine the joy of being reunited with loved ones. I am so anxious to see Dad. My wife has a twin sister that died a few days after birth. Yet this all pales to being in the midst of the glory of God. I cannot imagine anyone wanting to miss this.

## WITNESS OF THE HOLY ANGELS

But of that day and that hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father. (Mark 13:32)

Billy Graham's books on angels are well known works that offer much comfort to their Bible-believing readers. We enjoy reading about angels protecting us and ministering to us, as they did with baby Jesus and the resurrected Redeemer. We like to discuss instances such as my belief that my father saw angels that were to take him home to be with the Lord. The more hawkish of us perhaps are interested in the angel's roles in fighting evil. But another important point about angels is what we read about them outside the Bible can provide additional proof of Heaven and of eternal life. What are some of the angels' duties?

**They guard us:** For he shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee in all thy ways. They shall bear thee up in their hands, lest thou dash thy foot against a stone. (Psalms 91:11-12).

**They are mighty, they do not bring judgment:** Whereas angels, which are greater in power and might, bring not railing accusation against them before the Lord. (2 Peter 2:11).

**Angels watch us:** For I think that God hath set forth us the apostles last, as it were appointed to death: for we are made a spectacle unto the world, and to angels, and to men. (1 Corinthians 4:9).

**The angels from Heaven watched over our Savior:** (Jesus in the Garden of Gethsemane) Saying, Father, if thou be willing, remove this cup from me: nevertheless not my will, but thine, be done. And there appeared an angel unto him from heaven, strengthening him. (Luke 22:42-43).

**The angel at the tomb:** And, behold, there was a great earthquake: for the angel of the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled back the stone from the door, and sat upon it. His countenance was like, and his raiment white as snow: And for fear of him the keepers did shake, and became as dead men. (Matthew 28:2-4).

The angels are another tie between God, man, Heaven, earth, and eternity.

## WHO MAY ENTER INTO HEAVEN

<sup>24a</sup>How long dost thou make us to doubt? If thou be the Christ, tell us plainly.

<sup>25</sup>Jesus answered them, I told you, and ye believed not: the works that I do in my Father's name, they bear witness of me. <sup>26</sup>But ye believe not, because ye are not of my sheep, as I said unto you. <sup>27</sup>My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me: <sup>28</sup>And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand. <sup>29</sup>My Father, which gave them me, is greater than all; and no man is able to pluck them out of my Father's hand. <sup>30</sup>I and my Father are one. (John 10:24b-30)

He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the midst of the paradise of God. (Revelation 2:7)

I would like to say, "Everyone wants to go to Heaven." It does not seem that way at all. Many hear the way, but do not heed the way. Jesus said, *I am the Way, the Truth, and the Life. No man cometh unto the Father, but by me.* (John 14:6.) That is plain language compared to what I could write or say, but many who hear this cannot accept it. Nowhere does the Bible tell us to figure out our own way, or earn salvation on our own. There is only His way.

## HEAVEN IS NOT OPEN TO EVERYONE

We spend a lot of time looking at scripture telling us how to find salvation and how to get to Heaven. We do not spend enough time on the “how not to.”

<sup>39</sup>And one of the malefactors which were hanged railed on him, saying, If thou be Christ, save thyself and us. <sup>40</sup>But the other answering rebuked him, saying, Dost not thou fear God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation? <sup>41</sup>And we indeed justly; for we receive the due reward of our deeds: but this man hath done nothing amiss. <sup>42</sup>And he said unto Jesus, Lord, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdom. <sup>43</sup>And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, To day shalt thou be with me in paradise. (Luke 23:39-43)

In this passage, the first thief was getting the punishment he deserved on the cross as determined by the law of that day. There was an innocent man on the cross in the middle, and another deserving person on the third cross. The first man was either ridiculing Jesus, or ridiculing him and hoping for help from death without a supernatural redemption. The latter knew that the two criminals were getting what they deserved, but realized who Jesus was. The first man did not enter Heaven. Do you see that the first man was rebuked not by Christ, but by another man? Jesus will not know this man at Judgment:

<sup>21</sup>Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. <sup>22</sup>Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? <sup>23</sup>And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity. (Matthew 7:21-23)

Works will not get anyone into Heaven.

<sup>24</sup>Strive to enter in at the strait gate: for many, I say unto you, will seek to enter in, and shall not be able. <sup>25</sup>When once the master of the house is risen up, and hath shut to the door, and ye begin to stand without, and to knock at the door, saying, Lord, Lord, open unto us; and he shall answer and say unto you, I know you not whence ye are: <sup>26</sup>Then shall ye begin to say, We have eaten and drunk in thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streets. <sup>27</sup>But he shall say, I tell you, I know you not whence ye are; depart from me, all ye workers of iniquity. <sup>28</sup>There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God, and you yourselves thrust out. (Luke 13:24-28)

Many churchgoers hear but do not hear, and believe in strange requirements for getting into Heaven. “I have always done my best; I give to the poor every Christmas; I give to missions; I think God wants us just to believe ‘something’ and to be kind to others.” My personal belief is that some of these people are those described in Luke 13:24.

## IS JESUS THE MESSIAH?

The Messiah was the prophesied leader and deliverer of the Jews. Do you see the word “and?” The Messiah has two roles. One He has already fulfilled, the other is yet to be fulfilled.

The Jews have always been a persecuted people. It is no wonder that they were looking for the Messiah to come and deliver them from their oppressors. Well, the Messiah came. Picture yourself as a Zealot of New Testament times. Jesus comes to town and works miracles. Messiah! Messiah! Now the Zealots think the Jews are finally going to be victorious over their oppressors as prophesied. The only problem is, this Messiah wanted to be kind to others, He went from place to place telling parables, would not fight, and then died on a cross. That is exactly what the Messiah was supposed to do. Messiah, act one, that is.

When Jesus’ time on earth was over, He ascended to His rightful position in Heaven: *So then after the Lord had spoken unto them, he was received up into heaven, and sat on the right hand of God.* (Mark 16:19).

Messiah, act two, is what the Zealots wanted. This is still coming. The role is clearly defined in the book of Revelation in the New Testament and Daniel in the Old Testament. Not only will Israel’s enemies be defeated, but also so will Satan. About 2000 years ago some Jews accepted this situation and became the first Christians. Others did not accept Jesus’ Messiahship and have not become convinced in the time since.

The Messiah will return at the end of the Great Tribulation to rule the world. His saints will rule with Him. Make sure you are in His Army.

## IS THERE A LITERAL HELL?

The wicked shall be turned into hell, and all the nations that forget God. (Psalms 9:17)

Let death seize upon them, and let them go down quick into hell: for wickedness is in their dwellings, and among them. (Psalms 55:15)

I made the nations to shake at the sound of his fall, when I cast him down to hell with them that descend into the pit: and all the trees of Eden, the choice and best of Lebanon, all that drink water, shall be comforted in the nether parts of the earth. (Ezekial 31:16)

But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall (call his brother worthless) shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell fire. (Matthew 5:22)

And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it off, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell. (Matthew 5:30)

Hell is referenced as literally as Heaven. As sure as I am that there is a Heaven, I am that sure there is a hell. Hell is described as a place of great suffering. A place of anguish, of “wailing and gnashing of teeth.” A place of darkness, worms, fire, and punishment. Satan will be there, how nice could it be? Why would anyone want to go there?

Have you ever heard a group of guys say, “Well, if we go to hell, at least we’ll be together.” I would not count on being together. Do you think Satan would let you have fun, anyway? Of course I doubt if Satan will have any power in hell, certainly not the power to get out.

Would God send people He loves to hell? The Bible says He loves all of us. The Bible also says that there is only one way to eternal life. Further, those that do not go to Heaven go to hell. Do not plan to get into Heaven just because God is a God of love. Do you see the word “just” in the previous sentence? That is why God will send people to hell, because He is Just.

And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works. And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. (Revelation 20:13-14)

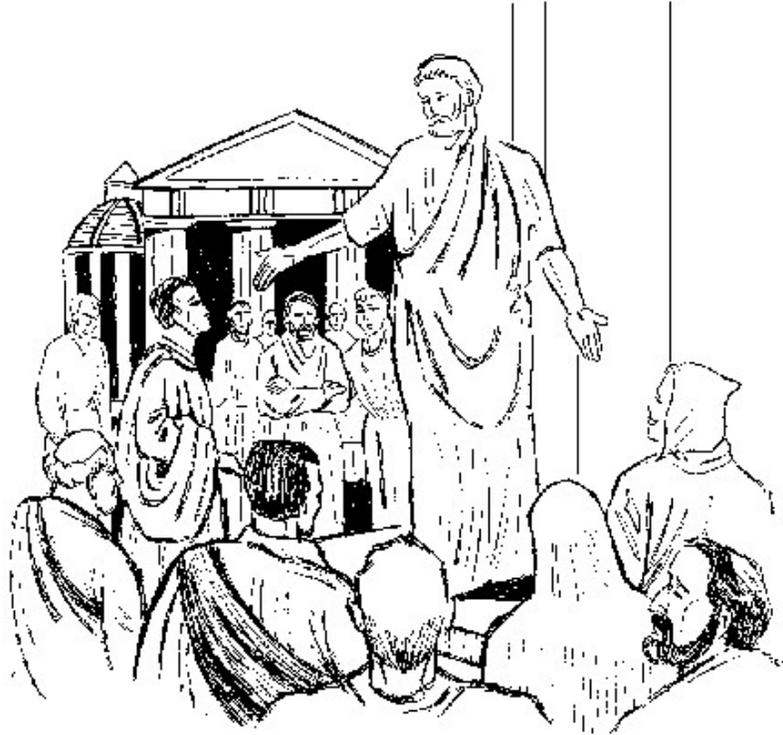
I have pondered over an eternal lake of fire for as long as I can remember. I have deliberated over Revelation 20:14 for a long time as well. Wishful thinking on my part is that when hell is thrown into the lake of fire, the souls of those in suffering vaporize, and they are no more rather than suffer eternal torment. I would not count on that.

## HOW DO YOU GET INTO HEAVEN?

A paragraph at the end of most chapters in this book that answers this question. If you do not want to take your chances with the lake of fire, I suggest you take these paragraphs seriously. We are all going to die. Make sure your reservation is made in Heaven. When you “call” to place your reservation, wording such as the following is suggested:

Dear God, I am a sinner. I am sorry for my sin and want to turn away from sin and toward you. I receive Jesus as my Savior and the Lord of my life. I will follow Him from now on. Please guide me in my Christian life. I pray this in Jesus name. Amen.”

## Chapter 11. Christians and Witnessing



### Paul witnessing to a multitude.

I have told everyone the Good News that you forgive people's sins. I have not been timid about it, as you well know, O Lord. (Psalms 40:9 Living Bible)

For I am not ashamed of this Good News about Christ. It is God's powerful method of bringing all who believe it to heaven. This message was preached first to the Jews alone, but now everyone is invited to come to God in this same way. (Romans 1:16 Living Bible)

I have been asked, “Why is it that born again Christians think they have to go around trying to convert everybody?” That much-generalized question absolutely is not true. It *should* be true. Our Lord commands us to witness. We have the best story to tell in the universe. We have the only religion that can guarantee me that I am going to see my Dad again. We do not tell anyone, well hardly anyone. How many people did you *see* today? How many did you tell about the Good News?

It would be difficult to prove to me that Christians try to “convert everybody.” I am 51 years old and no one has ever tried to witness to me. Maybe I look like a lost cause. You would think the odds would be that someone would care enough for me to ask me about salvation. (Of

course I am not counting my parents or own church.) In the dedication of this book I state that if it were not for my parents my soul might be lost. It is highly probable that my soul *would* be lost. Although I am no less special to God than anyone else is, He did not predestine me to go to Heaven. I accepted Christ as my Savior by free will.

## WHAT IS WITNESSING

Are you saved? Do you know Jesus as your personal Savior? When this style of witnessing is attempted, does the person approached understand what is asked? When we witness we do need to be intelligent about it. Saved from what? What is the difference between a Savior and a Personal Savior?

If you were selling encyclopedias door-to-door, would you ask, "Are you dumb?" Of course not. You would explain as thoroughly as you could why the person needs what you and your books have to say. Christian witnessing is the same. The degree varies a little depending on the experiences of all parties involved. The first Christian to meet an Aborigine would not say, "Are you saved?" That question would not make sense at all to the Aborigine and certainly would serve no purpose.

Witnessing, quite simply, is explaining God and why we need Him.

- God is eternal and always was.
- God created everything from nothing, so He owns everything, including us.
- Sin corrupted a perfect creation and brought death into the world.
- Jesus Christ, God incarnate, died on the cross for our sins.
- All who accept Jesus as their Savior shall have eternal life in a perfect (non-corrupt) Heaven with God?
- Salvation without Christ is not possible.
- Jesus gives us the bread of life.
- First feed the bread of life, then the needs of the flesh.

Simplified (scripture is from Living Bible)

1. GOD LOVES US: *For God loved the world so much that he gave his only Son so that anyone who believes in him shall not perish but have eternal life.* (John 3:16.)
2. MAN IS SINFUL (DISOBEDIENT TO GOD): Yes, all have sinned; all fall short of God's glorious ideal; (Romans 3:23.)
3. DEATH & SICKNESS ARE DUE TO SIN: <sup>16a</sup>*God said to the woman, ``You shall bear children in intense pain and suffering; you shall welcome your husband's affections.*'' <sup>17</sup>*And to Adam, God said, ``Because you ate the fruit when I told you not to, I have placed a curse upon the soil. All your life you will struggle to (live) from it. <sup>8</sup>*It will grow thorns and thistles. <sup>19</sup>All your life you will sweat to master it, until your dying day. Then you will return to the ground from which you came. For you were made from the ground, and to the ground you will return.''* (Genesis 3:16-19.)*

4. SIN HAS PENALTY: *For the wages of sin is death, but the free gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.* (Romans 6:23.)
5. JESUS CHRIST PAID OUR PENALTY WITH HIS LIFE: *<sup>6</sup>When we were utterly helpless with no way of escape, Christ came at just the right time and died for us sinners who had no use for him. <sup>7</sup>Even if we were good, we really would not expect anyone to die for us, though, of course, that might be barely possible. <sup>8</sup>But God showed his great love for us by sending Christ to die for us while we were still sinners.* (Romans 5:6-8.)
6. THE GIFT OF SALVATION IS FREE: How could a price be placed on Christ's death and resurrection? *<sup>8</sup>Because of his kindness (grace) you have been saved through trusting Christ. And even trusting is not of yourselves; it too is a gift from God. <sup>9</sup>Salvation is not a reward for the good we have done, so none of us can take any credit for it.* (Ephesians 2:8-9.)
7. WE MUST RECEIVE CHRIST: A gift is only a gift if you accept it. *But to all who received him, he gave the right to become children of God. All they needed to do was to trust him to save them.* (John 1:12.)
8. CHRIST IS A "PERSONAL" SAVIOR: Unlike most gods of the world, the True God cares about each of us. Jesus died for each one of us. He is a Personal God, a Personal Savior for those who accept Him. When any one receives Christ as savior, that one's name is recorded in Heaven. *Nothing evil will be permitted in (Heaven)--no one immoral or dishonest--but only those whose names are written in the Lamb's Book of Life.* (Revelation 21:27.)

#### WHERE SHOULD WE WITNESS?

And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature. (Mark 16:15)

And he sent us to preach the Good News everywhere and to testify that Jesus is ordained of God to be the Judge of all--living and dead. (Acts 10:42 Living Bible)

Jesus' command to go into the entire world did not limit us to skipping over to Africa and forgetting about our home area. Is your next-door neighbor less important than someone half a world away? Do you have no concern for your friends? There are roughly 250 million Americans. If 1 million Christians witnessed to 2 million friends one day, the next day those 2 million witnessed to 4 million, and so on, on the eighth day all 250 million Americans would know the Good News. So just because you did not become a missionary to Africa or another part of the world does not mean you cannot be a witness or should not witness.

The entire world does need missionaries. Those of us who stay back here in the comfort of democracy making ends meet need to support our missionaries on all continents. These servants of God make sacrifices we will not make and probably cannot imagine. The least we can do is witness to the loved ones the missionaries had to leave behind while they went to follow God's will.

## HOW TO WITNESS

Brooks Robinson was an outstanding baseball player when he and I were both a bit younger. He was the all-star third baseman for the Baltimore Orioles. One time I watched a program about him on a sports cable channel. He was praised as working hard to play above the natural ability God gave him. I admired that tremendously because all my life I wanted to be a professional baseball player. God apparently did not want that for me based on the amount of talent He trickled my way. So I understood what it meant to try to work hard and play above one's ability.

About 10 or so years ago I had the pleasure of meeting Brooks Robinson. I am not a very good speaker at all. If I want to say anything too complicated, I am better off to write it down. I was very nervous as I approached Mr. Robinson and said, "I have always admired you because they said you weren't that good." Can you imagine the look I got? I knew what I had done, but was too dumbstruck to correct myself. For this reason, it is better for me in certain situations to witness in writing.

We can witness orally, in writing, and by example. The former in my opinion is the more effective method. I have become braver with each time I witness. Prayer is definitely required. When witnessing in person, any questions can be addressed right then. Do not be afraid, what can be done to you? The apostle Paul sent a divinely inspired letter to Corinth worth reading:

<sup>1</sup>It is God himself, in his mercy, who has given us this wonderful work [of telling his Good News to others ], and so we never give up. <sup>2</sup>We do not try to trick people into believing--we are not interested in fooling anyone. We never try to get anyone to believe that the Bible teaches what it does not. All such shameful methods we forego. We stand in the presence of God as we speak and so we tell the truth, as all who know us will agree. <sup>3</sup>If the Good News we preach is hidden to anyone, it is hidden from the one who is on the road to eternal death. (2 Corinthians 4:1-3 Living Bible)

Still afraid? Read what Paul sent to the church at Ephesus:

<sup>11</sup>Put on all of God's armor so that you will be able to stand safe against all strategies and tricks of Satan. <sup>12</sup>For we are not fighting against people made of flesh and blood, but against persons without bodies--the evil rulers of the unseen world, those mighty satanic beings and great evil princes of darkness who rule this world; and against huge numbers of wicked spirits in the spirit world. <sup>13</sup>So use every piece of God's armor to resist the enemy whenever he attacks, and when it is all over, you will still be standing up. <sup>14</sup>But to do this, you will need the strong belt of truth and the breastplate of God's approval. <sup>15</sup>Wear shoes that are able to speed you on as you preach the Good News of peace with God. <sup>16</sup>In every battle you will need faith as your shield to stop the fiery arrows aimed at you by Satan. <sup>17</sup>And you will need the helmet of salvation and the sword of the Spirit--which is the Word of God. <sup>18</sup>Pray all the time. Ask God for anything in line with the Holy Spirit's wishes. Plead with him, reminding him of your needs, and keep praying earnestly for all Christians everywhere. (Ephesians 6:11-18 Living Bible)

The following are all examples of witnessing that do not require a lot of ability or knowledge and are easy for those who otherwise find it hard to witness:

- PRAY! How many people do you know doing God's work? Pray for them. Pastors, their wives, Sunday school teachers, missionaries- they all need our prayers.
- Invite someone to church. "The pastor is speaking about angels," "we're having special music," or "we're having a movie about the Holy Land," etc.
- Ask someone to come to a party at your house to watch Billy Graham on television.
- Similarly, refreshments, friends, and the *Jesus* film.
- Offer to sponsor a youth to a summer church camp.
- Volunteer to provide transportation to church services. Many people would love to attend church, especially the elderly, but cannot get there.
- Take bulletins and an audiotape of that day's service to a shut in.

If you cannot do any of the above on your own, become active in forming a committee to do something. Five people each doing a little is better than five people individually doing nothing. Let us not think that doing a little is not doing much. A little bit having been done in a given week, multiplied by 52 weeks per year, multiplied by a lot of years, can be more than you might imagine.

What is the possible contribution of a Christian that leads a drunk to Christ? The drunk turns from his evil ways, which was more than just alcohol, and eventually becomes a pastor. This pastor leads many more to Christ, and so forth. We have heard stories like this repeatedly. So what do you think about the contribution of the nervous Christian that first approached the drunk about Jesus?

## DEFEND YOUR FAITH

But sanctify the Lord in your hearts, and be ready always to give an answer to every man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you, with meekness and fear, Having a good conscience, that, whereas they speak evil of you, as of evildoers, they may be ashamed that falsely accuse your good manner of life in Christ. (1 Peter 3:15-16)

You witness to people who do not have personal relationships with Jesus Christ. These persons might be atheists or they might be on the verge of Salvation. If they are not interested you will probably find out fairly soon. Question: What if they are a bit interested and ask you a question like, "Where did Cain get his wife?" Answer: "Be ready always to give an answer." There is a real good source for many frequently asked questions. Appropriately, the book is called *The Answers Book*. Another good book with *lots* of answers is *Did Adam Have a Belly Button?* In fact this book has 185 answers to some very tough questions. Please see Recommended Reading.

Know what other faiths believe. How do you discuss who's right with a Jehovah's Witness if you don't know what he believes. Otherwise, it can be dangerous to argue with them.

Don't let them know more about their faith than you know about yours. Descriptions of what most other religions believe are contained in chapter 4.

## WITNESSING TO YOUNG PEOPLE

My mother taught Good News Club, Sunday School, Junior Church, and Vacation Bible School when I was young and continued to do so for many years. I mentioned in an earlier chapter that I remember her being my Sunday School teacher when I was about 5 years old. I was in many of her classes until I was a young teen. I saw first hand the effect of youth ministry on youngsters that received no instruction elsewhere. I saw first hand many children accept Christ as Savior in these programs. It touched me even then. It must have been wonderful for my mother.

Children can be so tender and open. No wonder Jesus loved them so. You can witness in this way. Volunteer to open your home to children. Sure, some will be noisy. Something might get broken. A beautiful child's soul might be saved, too. Maybe someone else will teach if you would open your home.

I grew up loving sports and greatly admired professional athletes. Imagine how enthused I was when I heard that some were Christians. I remember very well reading a tract about Yankees second baseman Bobby Richardson and a story in a Christian magazine about pitcher, Jim Kaat. Christian athletes are available for visits to churches and youth events. Try contacting one of the following organizations. They can most likely arrange for a professional or collegiate athlete to come and have fellowship with the young men and women of your church, school, or other organization.

Fellowship of Christian Athletes  
8701 Leeds Road  
Kansas City MO 64129  
Phone 816-921-0909  
Web site [fca@fca.org](mailto:fca@fca.org)

Unlimited Potential, Inc.  
P.O. Box 1355  
Warsaw IN 46581-1355  
Phone 219-267-7988  
Web site [www.upi.org](http://www.upi.org)

## MATERIALS FOR WITNESSING

Nowadays there are limitless supplies of materials. Most churches display a great variety of tracts, pamphlets, and booklets that address not only the plan of Salvation, but also special issues such as particular religious sects, social issues, and so on. Many tracts also list the names of booklets that can be found that address the related subject more deeply. Churches and Christian bookstores offer books, audiotapes, and videotapes that are excellent tools, as do many mission groups.

I have found that it is more effective to give materials to someone after the subject has been discussed. Suppose you have an acquaintance that does not believe in a literal Hell. It is not advisable to walk up to him some day, jam a booklet in his hand and say, "There is a Hell, this booklet tells you why, and you're going there." He is not likely to read the material. Suppose in discussion you tell him, "We do think there is a literal Hell for scriptural reasons. I have a booklet about it I'll bring in for you to look over." The chances are greater that the person will read the material when approached in this manner.

Some sources of tracts:

American Tract Society  
PO Box 462008  
Garland TX 75046  
800-548-7228

Good News Publishers  
9825 West Roosevelt Road  
Westchester IL 60153

Last Days Ministries  
Box 40  
Lindale TX 75771-0040

Answers in Genesis  
(See Recommended Reading)

## PROCRASTINATION

Do not procrastinate. You can witness in the present, not in the past. There is no assurance that you can witness in the next moment. If witnessing to someone is heavy on your heart, do it now. Just this week I received a phone call from a friend who told me his 88 year-old mother might not make it through the day. As soon as I got off the phone I began to pray. I stopped in mid-prayer and wondered why I waited until the last day of that woman's life to become concerned about her. She in fact did die later that day.

In the past year I learned that a man I knew well was terminally ill. I knew the man to be agnostic. He had a good side, but I knew his bad side too well. The last time I spoke to him about God, evolution, and creation, he said, "Maybe God looks like an amoeba" referencing man being made in God's image. I found that particularly offensive. He had a college biology degree, I did not, and he thought he knew it all.

When I learned of his terminal illness, my hard heart softened. I wrote him two "ingenious" letters using evolution and my newfound creation knowledge as my "M.O." I figured these letters would have him all set up, ready for me to ride in on a white horse, Bible in hand, and lead this man to eternal life. He died the night that I mailed the second letter.

Our pastor conducted the memorial service at the request of the family. That gave me a glimmer of hope that the man had a change of heart. I spoke to the pastor; there was no known repentance. When do I quit blaming myself for not doing what I should have done? How hard would it have been to drive five minutes to his house? To call him? To walk an hour to his house would not have been too much to ask compared to eternity.

## WITNESSING & MINISTERING TO OTHER CHRISTIANS

Witnessing is not limited to running out and finding heathens to convert, drunks to save, or murderers to reform. Our Christian brethren need ministering at times. The obvious need, which we are good at, is ministering to the sick and the shut-ins. That *is* very important. Our brothers and sisters also need ministry to their souls at times. It could be from the death of a loved one or other personal tragedy. At those times they are weak and vulnerable. Just as we might need antibiotics when our bodies' resistances are down, we need spiritual vaccination when our spirits are down.

## PREDESTINATION, ELECTION, CALVINISM

There are many fundamentalist Christians, sometimes called Calvinists after John Calvin, who believe in Predestination, or Election. There are five points of Calvinism, but the beliefs are that God handpicks whom He is going to save. I have a bit of difficulty thinking that God would pick me. In fact I attended a Calvinist church for about 2 years but left because the assistant pastor was dogmatic about this concept.

Whether a Christian is a Calvinist or not does not affect his salvation but it does affect his life. I have it on good authority that some that attend Calvinist churches believe there is no use witnessing, "It is all determined ahead of time." The Biblical interpretations are more complicated than what I present, but derive from the use of the words "elect" and "predestined" in the New Testament. Simply, God has *predestined* His *Elect*. My interpretation and that of most Christians is a bit different:

<sup>28</sup>And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to his purpose. <sup>29</sup>For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the firstborn among many brethren. <sup>30</sup>Moreover whom he did predestinate, them he also called: and whom he called, them he also justified: and whom he justified, them he also glorified. (Romans 8:28-30)

Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through sanctification of the spirit, unto obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ: Grace unto you, and peace, be multiplied. (1 Peter 1:2)

Do you see the relationships of the words "foreknow" (foreknowledge) and "predestinate?" The Omniscient Father knows everything for and of all time. He knows who

will overcome. These children He knows are “Elect” before they are saved. In the following scripture, reference is made to God’s perfect creation. He chose us all to be holy and live with Him in peace and love forever. Sin ruined that. When The Fall occurred, we were no longer predestined unto a holy life.

<sup>3</sup>Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ: <sup>4</sup>According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love: <sup>5</sup>Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will, <sup>6</sup>To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in the beloved. (Ephesians 1:3-6)

The word “elect” is found in the New Testament 16 times. The word “whosoever” with respect to salvation as in “whosoever will” appears in the New Testament more than double, 35 times. Following are just a few examples:

<sup>15</sup>That whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have eternal life. <sup>16</sup>For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. <sup>17</sup>For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved. <sup>18</sup>He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God. (John 3:15-18)

<sup>25</sup>Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live: <sup>26</sup>And whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die. Believest thou this? (John 11:25-26)

And it shall come to pass, that whosoever shall call on the name of the Lord shall be saved. (Acts 2:21)

These 3 “whosoever” passages, and the other 32, do not say “whosoever of the one’s God handpicked.” I believe the preponderance of the use of the word “whosoever” does show that salvation is “free will.” So get out and witness.

There is a paragraph at the end of each of the previous ten chapters outlining the plan of salvation. This time it is your turn. Come on, witness. This is your start. When you see the Lord, be ready to tell Him, “*I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith.*” (2 Timothy 4:7).

Note: I had a second meeting with Brooks Robinson. I assure you that it went well. With God we might not get a second chance. Life is very uncertain. It could end for you or someone you should witness to before time allows. Once we die, there are no more chances. Do not lose what is free for the taking.

## Chapter 12. Why Do Christians Suffer?



### Jesus heals Jairus's daughter.

Christians suffer with diseases as often and as bad as non-Christians. We often question, "Since God hears our prayers, why are we not healed?" Scripture tells us that God hears our prayers, and that He can heal us.

Heal me, O Lord, and I shall be healed; save me, and I shall be saved: for thou art my praise. (Jeremiah 17:14)

For I will restore health unto thee, and I will heal thee of thy wounds, saith the Lord; (Jeremiah 30:17a)

<sup>13a</sup>Is any among you afflicted? let him pray. <sup>14</sup>Is any sick among you? let him call for the elders of the church; and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord: <sup>15</sup>And the prayer of faith shall save the sick, and the Lord shall raise him up; and if he have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him. <sup>16</sup>Confess your faults one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be healed. The effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much. (James 5:13a-16)

Perhaps we do not understand how God hears and answers our prayers. Should God answer "yes" to everything we ask? Should we be Christians for greed? Yet, should God's Children suffer?

## ANSWERING OUR PRAYERS FOR HEALING

We could imagine that most Catholics, mainstream Protestants, and fundamentalist Christians do believe in God's divine healing powers in times before and times present. We accept the many miracles of healing performed by Jesus during His ministry on earth. Jesus showed those He healed that it was their faith that healed them, through God.

I mentioned Tim Gingrich, the song leader at our church, in an earlier chapter. It is hard to find someone with more faith and more zeal than Tim. Tim was electrocuted in 1989 while making repairs at the top of a silo. The high voltage stopped his heart and caused him to fall. God had other plans for Tim. The crushing impact when he landed broke his back, but fortuitously restarted his heart. The doctors told him he would never walk again. Tim told the doctors, against their word that he could not be healed, that *his God would heal him* and he *would* walk again.

Every Sunday, Tim Gingrich walks down the aisle of his Lord's House. I do not know if I could keep up with him, he is obviously eager to get up and sing praises to the God that healed him. Tim bounds up the several steps to the pulpit. When he gets there, grab your hymnal and hang on. By the way, the doctors also told Tim, and his wife Lynette that they would never have any more children. Their infant son, Ryan, might disagree with the doctors on that diagnosis. The Gingrich family places their faith in a Great Physician.

Churches hold prayer sessions for the ill ranging from simple prayer, to laying-on of hands by the elders. We know that Jesus healed when He walked the Holy Land. We also know that the apostles were given powers to heal. What about today and healing? The Bible does tell us that some will have the power to heal.

<sup>12</sup>Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater works than these shall he do; because I go unto my Father.

<sup>13</sup>And whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son. (John 14:12-13)

<sup>1</sup>Now concerning spiritual gifts, brethren, I would not have you ignorant. <sup>27</sup>Now ye are the body of Christ, and members in particular. <sup>28</sup>And God hath set some in the church, first apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helps, governments, diversities of tongues. (1 Corinthians 12:1, 27-28)

<sup>14</sup>Is any sick among you? let him call for the elders of the church; and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord: <sup>15</sup>And the prayer of faith shall save the sick, and the Lord shall raise him up; and if he have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him. (James 5:14-15)

## GOD PROMISES TO MEET OUR NEEDS

Therefore I say unto you, What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them. (Mark 11:24)

<sup>14</sup>And this is the confidence that we have in him, that, if we ask any thing according to his will, he heareth us: <sup>15</sup>And if we know that he hear us, whatsoever we ask, we know that we have the petitions that we desired of him. (1 John 5:14-15)

God is supposed to hear our prayers and answer our prayers. He promises to do so in the scriptures. He certainly does hear our prayers (He knows what we are thinking when we aren't praying). He also answers every prayer. Sometimes He says, "Yes," sometimes "No," and sometimes, "Later." In other words, He answers all of our prayers; just not necessarily with the answer we want to hear. Do you remember when Solomon said, "Divide the living child in two, and give half to the one, and half to the other?" (1 Kings 3:25.) This is a human example of an answer being "good" for one and "bad" for another.

My adult son and daughter have told me that they now understand the unpopular answers I gave them when they were younger, especially when they were teenagers. Likewise with God, there is a point when we do not understand getting a "No" answer. Try this logic: "Dear God, I would like to do a better job serving you. If you would get someone, somehow to give me a lot of money, or let me win the lottery, I would no longer have to work. Then I could spend lots of time witnessing door-to-door. Also I would be able to fish more and witness to those along the streams. And if you would take my arthritis away, I could do even more." Even though a prayer like this could be well intentioned, what do you think God's answer would be?

## WHAT ARE OUR NEEDS?

Who defines our needs?

<sup>6</sup>But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret; and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly.<sup>7</sup>But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking. <sup>8</sup>Be not ye therefore like unto them: for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask him. (Matthew 6:6-8)

God of course defines our needs. We need air to breathe, water to drink, food to eat, clothes for warmth, and a healthy body in order to continue our lives. That takes care of our physical needs. Ninety-nine percent of what we pray for is for the physical, right? Jesus said, "*The life is more than meat, and the body is more than raiment. Consider the ravens: for they neither sow nor reap; which neither have storehouse nor barn; and God feedeth them: how much more are ye better than the fowls?*" (Luke 12:23-24).

My firm belief is that our prayers for spiritual needs are answered faster and more often positively than are our needs of the flesh. We are quick to plead for our earthly needs, and quick to complain to God for getting "no answer."

Whatever God's reasons are for choosing not to heal in some situations, there is one reason we should discuss. Several years ago I was in the waiting room at my family doctor's office. A man came in from outside and asked if the doctor could see his wife. The man said she

was having chest pains. As things progressed, she was later wheeled passed me in a hallway to an examining room. I heard her say that she felt really sick, or words to that effect. A bit later, as I sat in an examination room, I heard a lot of commotion, an ambulance arrive, shouting of emergency orders, and finally, the husband crying loudly “My baby, my baby.”

What happened was obvious to me even though I sat in another room. Somber silence followed a flurry of doctor’s orders. The doctor eventually came in to see me. I could see he was quite upset over the situation. I told the doctor, “Hundreds of sick people come to see you. You help all of them. But in everyone’s life there comes one time when no matter what you do, it won’t be enough.” And so with God, there is one time in everyone’s life that prayers for healing will not be answered in our human terms. If that ill person is a Child of God, he or she will be healed forever, after this mortal body dies.

## SELF PITY

I am a severe migraine sufferer, and have been for most of my adult life. How many times have I asked God to take these from me? (Ten thousand times; once a day for 25 years?). I have spent many hours over many days for many years through several decades lying in bed, writhing in pain, praying yet receiving no relief. Aloud I asked God countless times why he would not answer my prayer. What good was it doing me or anyone else for me to be in this pain? Family outings were spoiled, plans ruined, and even going to church was and still is interrupted occasionally. I still get them. Does that mean God does not care for me? I know that He has heard my prayers.

God must care for me because He sent His Son to die for me. (Would I send my son to die for Him?) He must care for me a lot. So when I prayed 10,000 times, what did God say to me, how did He answer? Why did I not hear an answer for so many years? I worded my prayers every possible way that I could.

One answer to my prayers was to find a doctor that could help me. Under the care of Dr. R. Michael Gallagher, one of the world’s leading authorities on headaches and treatment, I have greatly improved. I still get a dozen or more migraines per month. Effective abortive medicines have become available in recent years; nonetheless, often these medications are slow or are ineffective on the worst of my headaches, which can last several days.

So what is God’s answer when a Christian is suffering and praying for help? He heals multitudes of sick people. He just does not heal everyone. Though He has the power and authority, He does not for reasons we do not understand. I had a tough time with this concept until I read a wonderful book by Max Lucado entitled “*In the Grip of Grace*”<sup>24</sup> One chapter in this book discusses an illness or condition the apostle Paul had, which is not named in the Bible, but was apparently of major discomfort to Paul. Paul’s attitude was much different than mine.

<sup>5b</sup>I will not boast about myself, except about my weaknesses...<sup>7</sup>To keep me from becoming conceited because of these surpassingly great revelations, there was given me a thorn in my flesh, a messenger of Satan, to torment me. <sup>8</sup>Three times I pleaded with the Lord to take it away from me. <sup>9</sup>But He said to me, “My grace is sufficient for you, for my power is made perfect in weakness.” <sup>10</sup>Therefore I will boast all the more gladly about my weaknesses, so that Christ’s power may rest on

me. <sup>11</sup>That is why, for Christ's sake, I delight in weaknesses, in insults, in hardships, in persecutions, in difficulties. For when I am weak, then I am strong. (2 Corinthians 12 NIV)

When I read this scripture, I immediately realized how trivial my headaches are compared to eternal life. It touched me so I cried and cried, and thanked God for His grace that would allow me to spend eternity with my Lord free of ailments. Sickness, disease, and death are a result of first sin. God has no obligation for the fall of man and the price that came with the fall. But He provided a substitute to take away our punishment of death.

I shared what this scripture meant to me with my mother. Little did I know that the very same verses got her through a difficult, bed-ridden pregnancy 45 years earlier. My sister, Jane, was the result of that pregnancy. Jane is the one that told me of a friend, Dr. Gallagher, who diagnoses and treats headaches. She convinced me to make the 340 mile round trip to see him, which I continue to make every eight weeks. *Can you see that God began answering my prayer, through the 2 Corinthians chapter 12 passage, decades before I prayed it?*

Note: Dr. Gallagher was the principal investigator in the development of the medication involved in the well-publicized episode of Terrell Davis overcoming a migraine and getting back into the 1998 Super Bowl, going on to win the game and the MVP award.

It is thought provoking that the worldlier my life has become, the more I have suffered. Stress at work- migraine. How to get promotions, raises, new cars, and bigger houses- migraines. How to do something for God- no migraine. How to squeeze doing something for God in between doing something for me and something for my job- migraine.

#### ORIGIN OF DEATH AND DISEASE; WHO IS TO BLAME?



Should we blame God for death and disease? God made everything, right? If I build something and it falls over, it is my fault. The difference is that if I build something that falls over, it is because it was not designed or built properly. Remember my two-way radio and my “instruckshins?” (That *is* how I spelled it, by the way.) I am neither all knowing nor perfect. Therefore it should not be too surprising if I build a failure.

God is perfect. He knows all. He cannot do anything wrong. When He completed creation on day 6, He called it “good.” Man messed it up. We brought on death and destruction, not God. Let us not blame God. When we blame God we are even sillier than when we hear a tired, frustrated child complain, “You made me mess up.” I know you heard that one before.

When you are ill, would you rather get better or die and go on to Heaven? You would rather get better, right? The worst of the two, death, really show us that God actually cares. Death is brought on by man’s sins; we would not obey God. To save us from death, God had to send His son, Jesus Christ, to die on the cross; Jesus had to die so we could live. God will take death, and sickness, away from His children forever in Heaven. So death does show how greatly God loves us.

<sup>55</sup>O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory? <sup>56</sup>The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law. But thanks be to God, which giveth us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ. (1 Corinthians 15:55-57)

Rhetorical question: what do we do when someone causes death to our child? I heard of a man who reportedly sawed a neighbor in half, alive, for allegedly running over his son with a car. In other instances some of us never recover. We take grief and hatred to the grave. What did God do? He made Heaven for us.

## NEW BODIES

What good would life after death be if we got another feeble body, were destined to live again in sickness and destruction, and yet another death? That is not the way God is playing it out. Believers on Christ will find a different situation. We are destined to die only once because of sin, if we accept Christ as Savior.

<sup>35</sup>But some man will say, How are the dead raised up? And with what body do they come? <sup>36</sup>Thou fool, that which thou sowest is not quickened, except it die: <sup>37</sup>And that which thou sowest, thou sowest not that body that shall be, but bare grain, it may chance of wheat, or of some other grain: <sup>38</sup>But God giveth it a body as it hath pleased him, and to every seed his own body. <sup>39</sup>All flesh is not the same flesh: but there is one kind of flesh of men, another flesh of beasts, another of fishes, and another of birds. <sup>40</sup>There are also celestial bodies, and bodies terrestrial: but the glory of the celestial is one, and the glory of the terrestrial is another. <sup>41</sup>There is one glory of the sun, and another glory of the moon, and another glory of the stars: for one star differeth from another star in glory. <sup>42</sup>So also is the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption; it is raised in incorruption: <sup>43</sup>It is sown in dishonour; it is raised in glory: it is sown in

weakness; it is raised in power: <sup>44</sup>It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body. There is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body. <sup>45</sup>And so it is written, The first man Adam was made a living soul; the last Adam was made a quickening spirit. <sup>46</sup>Howbeit that was not first which is spiritual, but that which is natural; and afterward that which is spiritual. <sup>47</sup>The first man is of the earth, earthy: the second man is the Lord from heaven. <sup>48</sup>As is the earthy, such are they also that are earthy: and as is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly. <sup>49</sup>And as we have borne the image of the earthy, we shall also bear the image of the heavenly. <sup>50</sup>Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; neither doth corruption inherit incorruption. <sup>51</sup>Behold, I shew you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, <sup>52</sup>In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. <sup>53</sup>For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality. <sup>54</sup>So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory. <sup>55</sup>O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory? <sup>56</sup>The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law. <sup>57</sup>But thanks be to God, which giveth us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ. (1 Corinthians 15:35-57)

Can we complain about aches and pains on earth that are but the blink of an eye of eternity?

<sup>23</sup>For you have a new life. It was not passed on to you from your parents, for the life they gave you will fade away. This new one will last forever, for it comes from Christ, God's ever-living Message to men. <sup>24</sup>Yes, our natural lives will fade as grass does when it becomes all brown and dry. All our greatness is like a flower that droops and falls; <sup>25</sup>but the Word of the Lord will last forever. And his message is the Good News that was preached to you. (1 Peter 1:23-25 Living Bible)

My father kept a diary. On May 17, 1992, he entered, "When I leave this earth, don't mourn for me- be prepared to join me at the end of your (life)." This was written before his first bout with cancer. In 1996, Dad began the first of three successive years of fighting cancer. The chemotherapy and other treatments were painful and a lot to bear for a 75 year-old man. Dad was looking forward to his new, incorruptible body as he endured these treatments. Here are the thoughts of a man knowing what God had waiting for him:

- April 24, 1996. "I can't do much work anymore. To anyone reading this, put your trust in Jesus Christ and come see me and my new body."
- May 6, 1996. "I am a coward, even though I know that for me to die is gain. I am so glad I love Jesus. I'm so glad He loves me."
- December 18, 1996. "I'm not very confident of my condition. I just have to repeat, I'm so glad there is a Heaven that we are promised."

- March 7, 1997. “Another not so hot day. Things are sure to get better for me someday.”

We who know Jesus as our Savior can take comfort in the same promises. Do you want a new, incorruptible body someday? My Dad joined Jesus in Heaven on July 25, 1998.

## ALTERNATIVE HEALING

We cannot pick up a health magazine, or almost any secular magazine for that matter, without finding articles on alternative healing, medicinal uses of herbs, and so forth. What would God think of alternative healing methods?

To start, what is “alternative” besides “different,” new, or from “someplace else?” When the “white man’s medicine” was introduced to the “heathens” of the world, these “new” medicines were “alternative” as far as the natives were concerned. I suppose there was reluctance and discontentment among the people resulting from the strange new ways. Our world is self-contained. Is anything new under the sun?

<sup>27</sup>So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them. <sup>28</sup>And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it (control it): and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth. <sup>29</sup>And God said, Behold, I have given you every herb bearing seed, which is upon the face of all the earth, and every tree, in the which is the fruit of a tree yielding seed; to you it shall be for meat. (Genesis 1:27-29)

God probably taught Adam what to eat. At some time He probably also taught Adam the use of every herb, and after the Fall, possibly the medicinal value. Some time along the line of time, we forgot the use of some of the herbs. Some herbs, and plants, became regionalized after the Flood, further diminishing our mastering, or subduing, of the earth.

Because of the influence of the evolutionists, we assume that 6000 years ago, people were dumb. This is just not so. If you think God created early man to be slow-witted, “uneducated” oafs, read *The Puzzle of Ancient Man* by Donald E. Chittick<sup>25</sup>. You will be astounded at what early man could do.

## *WHY DO CHRISTIANS SUFFER?* BY THEODORE EPP

During one of the early occasions that my mother reviewed the notes for this book, she noticed the exact title I had chosen for this chapter was “Why Do Christians Suffer?” Mom told me that she had a book written by Theodore Epp (Back to the Bible) with the same title, originally copyrighted in 1970. I might have read that book years ago, I do not recall. It is an excellent book and well suited to people such as me that have wallowed in self-pity. See Recommended Reading.

Following is a very brief review of the late Theodore H. Epp's writings on this subject:

- Suffering is a result of sin. It is physical and mental. It can build us- witness Job, and produces spiritual growth.
- Satan hates God and wanted to drive a wedge between himself and God. Man has free will and chose to sin.
- Christ was the supreme sufferer, though He himself is perfect. Christ's suffering brought us hope and eternal life.
- Sickness tests our faith. If we overcome our trials, we will find joy within.
- God permits suffering to chasten us. Chastisement can be disciplinary, corrective, educative, or preventive.
- Suffering also can be purifying, fruit bearing, perfecting, and reducing of the ego.
- Learn how to suffer, with and for Christ. We should not despise the chastening. Do not become calloused, "murmur," criticize God, or give up.
- Renew your confidence in God, pray, count your blessings.
- Praise the Lord, love others, submit yourself to God.
- Glorify God.

There are two closing prayers for this chapter. The first is reserved for those who believe in Jesus Christ as their Lord and Personal Savior, and need strengthened due to an affliction or other physical or mental pain.

Dear Father in Heaven, "You know I am suffering from \_\_\_\_\_. I need your help so that I might bear this affliction. Help me to understand your will for me. Please remove this from me if it is your will. If not, as you told Paul 2000 years ago, your grace is sufficient for me. Please give me strength. In Jesus name we pray, Amen."

To those of you who still do not have the joy of knowing the assurance of eternal life through the Savior Christ Jesus, the following prayer is for you. Many have said they would die for their country, their commanding officer, or some other earthly leader. If you join God's Army, you might not have to die for Him, you might only have your pain to glorify Him rather than the serpent that tempted man into sin.

Dear God, "I have read how you sent your Son to suffer a terrible death, in humility, in pain incomprehensible, for my sins. This was done out of your love because my ancestors were weak and sinned against you. I have read that the wages of sin is death, and that those who do not follow you are damned to an eternity in hell. I know I am a sinner and need you. I ask that Jesus enter my heart and my life to save me from hell and to give me eternal life with you in Heaven, a life with a new incorruptible body. Thank you for hearing my prayer and saving my soul. I ask this prayer in the name of your only Son, Jesus Christ, Amen."

## Chapter 13. Should the Church Keep up With the Times?



<sup>89</sup>For ever, O Lord, thy word is settled in heaven. <sup>90</sup>Thy faithfulness is unto all generations: thou hast established the earth, and it abideth. <sup>160</sup> Thy word is true from the beginning: and every one of thy righteous judgments endureth for ever. (Psalms 119:89, 90, 160)

God's word is true from the beginning. God is omniscient. He is infallible. (He cannot be wrong.) His righteous judgments endure forever. Therefore, what He said in the beginning is still true today. The rules have not changed, and so the Church should not take the liberty of changing them.

There really was no beginning with God, only with man and the rest of creation. Truth always was what it was and was what it is. It is man that tries to change it, not God.

Our world is decaying due to our fallible nature and our willingness to be deceived by our adversary, Satan. We want to believe what we want to believe, even when we know it is wrong. Why are we so set on living for the world rather than living for God? We find a clue when we look at the first deception.

## SATAN'S DECEPTION & FIRST SIN

Satan did not go to Eve and just outright suggest that she go against God. Instead, Satan tried to confuse issues, raise doubts, and teach rationalization. Look at what Satan says:

- *Now the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field which the Lord God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden?* (Genesis 3:1). Satan cast doubt; did God really say that?
- Eve replied to Satan that she and Adam could not eat of the tree in the midst of the garden or they would die. *And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die:* (Genesis 3:4). Doubt, again. You will not die. God did not say that, He did not mean that.
- Satan continues, *For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil.* (Genesis 3:5). God did not mean it because He does not want you to be as smart as He. God is a liar.

That is Satan's method. Did God say that? Did He mean that? It is not true. It is not true today. God is a liar.

## WHY DOES THE CHURCH CHANGE?

My favorite change in a church occurred in the Mormon Church. I am told that the government was about to come down on the Mormon's for allowing and encouraging polygamy, I believe in the twentieth century. When things were about to get rough, the Mormon elders suddenly received a "divine revelation" that they should no longer allow polygamy (it still goes on with some members). The other incident I heard of was that the Mormons would not allow black ministers. The government did not look kindly on racism within the church. Another timely revelation saved the day again. I wonder if these are known as the "big" revelations; bigotry and bigamy?

Let us talk about real churches (ones that believe that Jesus is God). What is our excuse for changing the rules? I am not referring to legalistic issues such as wearing coverings, makeup, whether Christians should attend movies, and so on. Those issues are between the Christian, his or her convictions, and God. Remember 1 Corinthians 4:6-7, that your convictions might be law for you, but not for someone else.

## THE ECUMENICAL MOVEMENT

This is watered down religion barely worth practicing. The message is love, tolerance, and anything goes. Tolerance includes lenience for sin and sinful acts. The ecumenical church is the Church in Laodicea from Revelation chapter 3. Christ said, "Because you are lukewarm, I

will spew thee out of my mouth.” This is not a good example of why the Church should keep up with the times.

## ENDORSEMENT OF HOMOSEXUAL LIFESTYLES

Chapter 7 lists the Biblical reasons as to why homosexuality is against God’s word. Yes, we should love gay church members as any other, and openly welcome all gays to come to our churches; but we should not endorse gay lifestyles. The homosexual act is what God says is an abomination.

Where today’s church is wrong is in endorsement of gay relationships. We should not ordain ministers in gay relationships and we should not sanction gay weddings. I really do not care what the Equal Rights Amendment has to say on this subject because I am referring to higher law. A gay minister makes no more sense than an open adulterer or other sexual sinner. This immoral example is one reason why the Church should not keep up with the times.

## DIVORCE AND THE CHURCH

A logical step after using the example of an immoral minister above is to discuss the real life example we have in my neighborhood. We have a pastor of a mainline Protestant church that was committing adultery. He eventually divorced his wife, married his adulteress, and continues to pastor a congregation. Another example of why the Church should not keep up with the times.

## MODERN SCIENCE AND THE CHURCH

I pray that chapters 1 through 3 gave you enough information to draw the conclusion that science has not proved evolution. Scientists deserve credit for the facts they found that point toward special creation. The Church has fallen into Satan’s trap of not believing God, just as Eve did. We think we have to compromise with science either because science is right about evolution (a lie) or because we do not want to look dumb to the world. Instead we look dumb to God. We look dumb to Satan, too. He loves our gullibility. Evolution is not a good reason to keep up with the times.

## SEPARATION OF CHURCH AND STATE

The first settlers came to America to avoid religious persecution by the government. Today, guess what we have- religious persecution by the government, a government that is “one nation, under God” with the motto, “In God We Trust.” We cannot pray in school. If we are to have true separation, then the government should not have a right to interfere with the inner church. ERA should not tell us that we must have homosexual ministers, for example. Today’s

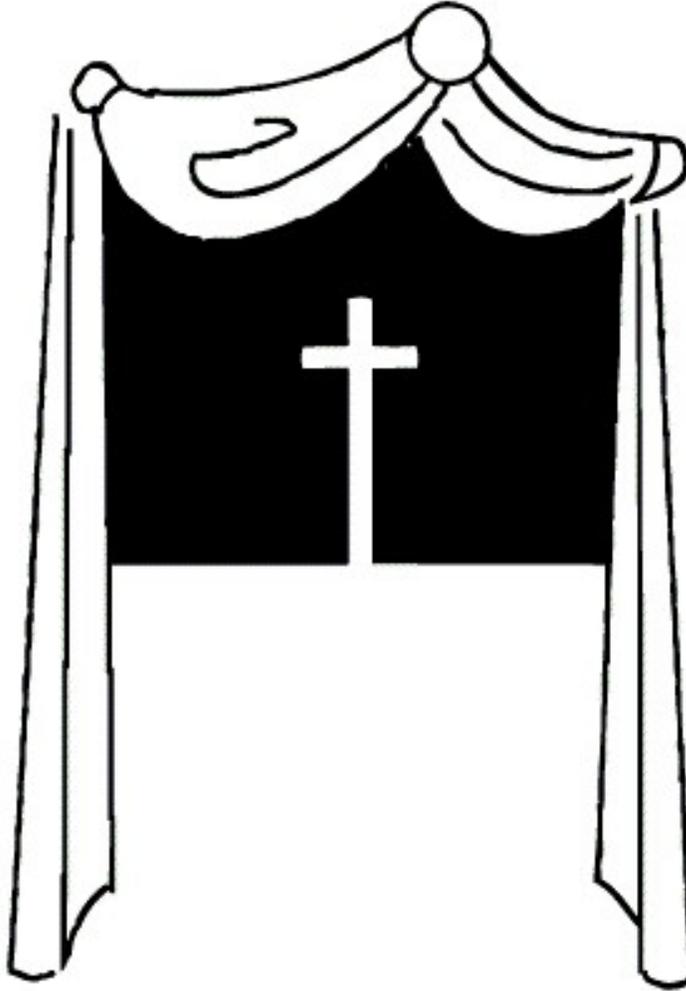
governments are “keeping up with the times,” that is, reacting to the minority. Government edicts on what our churches should do are not a reason for the Church to keep up with the times.

## CONCLUSION

I know of no reason why the Church should keep up with the times. What changed since the beginning? We know that the ecumenical church is inevitable. It will be the church of the Tribulation, *Babylon the Great, The Mother of Harlots and Abominations of the Earth* (Revelation 17:5). Satan will allow this church to be *the* church, essentially a dead church. However, the ecumenical church will be destroyed 42 months into the Tribulation, which is the start of the Great Tribulation. *And (the angel) cried mightily with a strong voice, saying, Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird.* (Revelation 18:2).

Keeping up with the times nowadays is in effect the ecumenical movement. This “communion” of churches weakens *the* Church. This is another strike against the Church keeping up with the times.

## PART IV DEPART IN PEACE



**See now that I, even I, am he, and there is no god beside me; I kill and I make alive; I wound and I heal; and there is none that can deliver out of my hand. Deuteronomy 32:39 RSV**

## Chapter 14. Know The Enemy



During one of our philosophical discussions, Shelley Kolbert and I drifted from an article taken from the February 16, 2001, radio broadcast *Answers...with Ken Ham*, to the subject of Satan. The essence of the radio broadcast was that the Book of Genesis is vital to understanding the New Testament doctrine.

Shelley and I had a question about “the enemy.” How do the number of references to Satan found in the Old Testament compare to the New Testament? Since the New Testament is the evangelical anthology, we would expect to find the most references to be there. That is what the following indicate.

### THE PERSONALITY OF SATAN

**Original sin: a deceitful liar:** Now the **serpent** was more subtle than any beast of the field which the Lord God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden? (Genesis 3:1)

**Tormentor:** But the Spirit of the Lord departed from Saul, and an **evil spirit** from the Lord troubled him. And Saul's servants said unto him, Behold now, an evil spirit from God troubleth thee. (1 Samuel 16:14-15)

**Liar:** And there came forth a spirit, and stood before the Lord, and said, I will persuade him. And the Lord said unto him, Wherewith? And he said, I will go forth, and I will be a **lying spirit** in the mouth of all his prophets. And he said, Thou shalt persuade him, and prevail also: go forth, and do so. (1 Kings 22:21-22)

**False god:** But the angel of the Lord said to Elijah the Tishbite, Arise, go up to meet the messengers of the king of Samaria, and say unto them, Is it not because there is not a God in Israel, that ye go to inquire of **Baalzebub** the god of Ekron? (2 Kings 1:3)

**Tempter:** And **Satan** stood up against Israel, and provoked David to number Israel. (1 Chronicles 21:1)

**Tempter:** Now there was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before the Lord, and **Satan** came also among them. And the Lord said unto Satan, Whence comest thou? Then Satan answered the Lord, and said, From going to and fro in the earth, and from walking up and down in it. And the Lord said unto Satan, Hast thou considered my servant Job,

that there is none like him in the earth, a perfect and an upright man, one that feareth God, and escheweth evil? Then Satan answered the Lord, and said, Doth Job fear God for nought? Hast not thou made an hedge about him, and about his house, and about all that he hath on every side? Thou hast blessed the work of his hands, and his substance is increased in the land. But put forth thine hand now, and touch all that he hath, and he will curse thee to thy face. And the Lord said unto Satan, Behold, all that he hath is in thy power; only upon himself put not forth thine hand. So Satan went forth from the presence of the Lord. (Job 1:6-12)

And **Satan** answered the Lord, and said, Skin for skin, yea, all that a man hath will he give for his life. (Job 2:4)

**Adversary:** Oh that one would hear me! behold, my desire is, that the Almighty would answer me, and that **mine adversary** had written a book. (Job 31:35)

**Destroyer:** Concerning the works of men, by the word of thy lips I have kept me from the paths of the **destroyer**. (Psalms 17:4)

**Adversary:** O God, how long shall the **adversary** reproach? shall the enemy blaspheme thy name forever? (Psalms 74:10)

**Enemy:** I will say of the Lord, He is my refuge and my fortress: my God; in him will I trust. Surely he shall deliver thee from the snare of **the fowler**, and from the noisome pestilence. (Psalm 91:2,3)

**Friend of the wicked:** Set thou a wicked man over him: and let **Satan** stand at his right hand. (Psalms 109:6)

**Proud:** How art thou fallen from heaven, O **Lucifer**, son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations! For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High. Yet thou shalt be brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit. (Isaiah 14:12-15)

**Destroyer:** The lion is come up from his thicket, and **the destroyer** of the Gentiles is on his way; he is gone forth from his place to make thy land desolate; and thy cities shall be laid waste, without an inhabitant. (Jeremiah 4:7)

**Accuser:** And he shewed me Joshua the high priest standing before the angel of the Lord, and **Satan** standing at his right hand to resist him. And the Lord said unto Satan, The Lord rebuke thee, O Satan; even the Lord that hath chosen Jerusalem rebuke thee: is not this a brand plucked out of the fire? (Zechariah 3:1-2)

**Tempter:** Then was Jesus led up of the Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted of **the devil**. (Matthew 4:1)

**Tempter:** Then saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, **Satan**: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve. Then the devil leaveth him, and, behold, angels came and ministered unto him. (Matthew 4:10-11)

**Tormentor:** And Jesus knew their thoughts, and said unto them, Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation; and every city or house divided against itself shall not stand: And if **Satan** cast out Satan, he is divided against himself; how shall then his kingdom stand? And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your children cast them out? therefore they shall be your judges. But if I cast out devils by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of God is come unto you. (Matthew 12:25-28, compare Mark 3:23 and Luke 11:18-20)

**Representation of evil:** But he turned, and said unto Peter, Get thee behind me, **Satan:** thou art an offence unto me: for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but those that be of men. Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for my sake shall find it. For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul? (Matthew 16:23-26, compare Mark 8:33 and Luke 4:8)

**Condemned:** Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for **the devil** and his angels: (Matthew 25:41)

**Destroyer:** The sower soweth the word. And these are they by the way side, where the word is sown; but when they have heard, **Satan** cometh immediately, and taketh away the word that was sown in their hearts. (Mark 4:14-15, compare Matthew 13:39 and Luke 8:11-12)

**Tempter:** Being forty days tempted of **the devil**. And in those days he did eat nothing: and when they were ended, he afterward hungered. (Luke 4:2, compare Mark 1:13)

**Tormentor:** For he had commanded the unclean spirit to come out of the man. For oftentimes it had caught him: and he was kept bound with chains and in fetters; and he brake the bands, and was driven of **the devil** into the wilderness. (Luke 8:29)

**Subject to Christ:** He that heareth you heareth me; and he that despiseth you despiseth me; and he that despiseth me despiseth him that sent me. And the seventy returned again with joy, saying, Lord, even the devils are subject unto us through thy name. And he said unto them, I beheld **Satan** as fall from heaven. Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you. (Luke 10:16-19)

**Reviler:** And the ruler of the synagogue answered with indignation, because that Jesus had healed on the sabbath day, and said unto the people, There are six days in which men ought to work: in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the sabbath day. The Lord then answered him, and said, Thou hypocrite, doth not each one of you on the sabbath loose his ox or his ass from the stall, and lead him away to watering? And ought not this woman, being a daughter of Abraham, whom **Satan** hath bound, lo, these eighteen years, be loosed from this bond on the sabbath day? (Luke 13:14-16)

**Antichrist:** Now the feast of unleavened bread drew nigh, which is called the Passover. And the chief priests and scribes sought how they might kill him; for they feared the people. Then entered **Satan** into Judas surnamed Iscariot, being of the number of the twelve. And he went his way, and communed with the chief priests and captains, how he might betray him unto them. (Luke 22:1-4, compare John 13:2)

**Tormentor:** And the Lord said, Simon, Simon, behold, **Satan** hath desired to have you, that he may sift you as wheat: But I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not: and when thou art converted, strengthen thy brethren. (Luke 22:31-32)

**Liar:** Ye are of your father **the devil**, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it. (John 8:44)

**Wolf:** I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd giveth his life for the sheep. But he that is an hireling, and not the shepherd, whose own the sheep are not, seeth the **wolf** coming, and leaveth the sheep, and fleeth: and the wolf catcheth them, and scattereth the sheep. (John 10:11-12)

**Unrighteous ruler:** Now is the judgment of this world: now shall the **prince of this world** be cast out. (John 12:31)

**Subject to Christ:** I do not have much more time to talk to you, for the **evil prince of this world** approaches. He has no power over me, (John 14:30 Living Bible)

**Condemned:** Nevertheless I tell you the truth; It is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send him unto you. And when he is come, he will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment: Of sin, because they believe not on me; Of righteousness, because I go to my Father, and ye see me no more; Of judgment, because the **prince of this world** is judged. (John 16:7-11)

**Tempter:** But Peter said, Ananias, why hath **Satan** filled thine heart to lie to the Holy Ghost, and to keep back part of the price of the land? (Acts 5:3)

**Subject to Christ:** How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Ghost and with power: who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of **the devil**; for God was with him. (Acts 10:38)

**Unrighteous:** And said, O full of all subtlety and all mischief, thou child of **the devil**, thou enemy of all righteousness, wilt thou not cease to pervert the right ways of the Lord? (Acts 13:10)

**Subject to God:** But rise, and stand upon thy feet: for I have appeared unto thee for this purpose, to make thee a minister and a witness both of these things which thou hast seen, and of those things in the which I will appear unto thee; Delivering thee from the people, and from the Gentiles, unto whom now I send thee, To open their eyes, and to turn them from darkness to light, and from the power of **Satan** unto God, that they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance among them which are sanctified by faith that is in me. (Acts 26:16-18)

**Subject to God:** And the God of peace shall bruise **Satan** under your feet shortly. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you. Amen. (Romans 16:20)

**Subject to Christ:** In the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, when ye are gathered together, and my spirit, with the power of our Lord Jesus Christ, To deliver such an one unto **Satan** for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus. (1 Corinthians 5:4-5)

**Tempter:** Defraud ye not one the other, except it be with consent for a time, that ye may give yourselves to fasting and prayer; and come together again, that **Satan** tempt you not for your incontinency. (1 Corinthians 7:5)

**Deceiver:** For to this end also did I write, that I might know the proof of you, whether ye be obedient in all things. To whom ye forgive any thing, I forgive also: for if I forgave any thing, to whom I forgave it, for your sakes forgave I it in the person of Christ; Lest **Satan** should get an advantage of us: for we are not ignorant of his devices. (2 Corinthians 2:9-11)

**Deceiver:** But if our gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are lost: In whom the **god of this world** hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them. For we preach not ourselves, but Christ Jesus the Lord; and ourselves your servants for Jesus' sake. (2 Corinthians 4:3-5)

**Unrighteous:** Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? and what communion hath light with darkness? And what concord hath Christ with **Belial**? or what part hath he that believeth with an infidel? (2 Corinthians 6:14-15)

**Deceiver:** But I fear, lest by any means, as **the serpent** beguiled Eve through his subtlety, so your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity that is in Christ. (2 Corinthians 11:3)

**Deceiver:** But what I do, that I will do, that I may cut off occasion from them which desire occasion; that wherein they glory, they may be found even as we. For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of Christ. And no marvel; for **Satan** himself is transformed into an angel of light. Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness; whose end shall be according to their works. (2 Corinthians 11:12-15)

**Tormentor:** And lest I should be exalted above measure through the abundance of the revelations, there was given to me a thorn in the flesh, the messenger of **Satan** to buffet me, lest I should be exalted above measure. For this thing I besought the Lord thrice, that it might depart from me. And he said unto me, My grace is sufficient for thee: for my strength is made perfect in weakness. Most gladly therefore will I rather glory in my infirmities, that the power of Christ may rest upon me. (2 Corinthians 12:7-9)

**Ruler of godless:** And you hath he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins; Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to **the prince of the power of the air**, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience: Among whom also we all had our conversation in times past in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind; and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others. (Ephesians 2:1-3)

**Representation of evil:** Be ye angry, and sin not: let not the sun go down upon your wrath: Neither give place to **the devil**. (Ephesians 4:26-27)

**The enemy:** Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of **the devil**. For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places. Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand. (Ephesians 6:11-13)

**Representation of evil:** Wherefore we would have come unto you, even I Paul, once and again; but **Satan** hindered us. (1 Thessalonians 2:18)

**Deceiver, Liar:** And then shall that Wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming: Even him, whose coming is after the working of **Satan** with all power and signs and lying wonders, And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. (2 Thessalonians 2:8-10)

**Representation of evil:** Of whom is Hymenaeus and Alexander; whom I have delivered unto **Satan**, that they may learn not to blaspheme. (1 Timothy 1:20)

**Deceiver:** Not a novice, lest being lifted up with pride he fall into the condemnation of **the devil**. Moreover he must have a good report of them which are without; lest he fall into reproach and the snare of the devil. (1 Timothy 3:6-7)

**Deceiver, Liar:** Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to **seducing spirits**, and doctrines of **devils**, Speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron; Forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstain from meats, which God hath created to be received with thanksgiving of them which believe and know the truth. (1 Timothy 4:1-3)

**Representation of evil:** For some are already turned aside after **Satan**. (1 Timothy 5:15)

**Representation of evil:** And the servant of the Lord must not strive; but be gentle unto all men, apt to teach, patient, In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves; if God peradventure will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth; And that they may recover themselves out of the snare of **the devil**, who are taken captive by him at his will. (2 Timothy 2:24-26)

**Condemned:** And again, I will put my trust in him. And again, Behold I and the children which God hath given me. Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he also himself likewise took part of the same; that through death he might destroy him that had the power of death, that is, **the devil**; And deliver them who through fear of death were all their lifetime subject to bondage. (Hebrews 2:13-15)

**Subject to God:** Submit yourselves therefore to God. Resist **the devil**, and he will flee from you. (James 4:7)

**Adversary:** Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary **the devil**, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour: (1 Peter 5:8)

**Representation of evil:** For if God spared not **the angels that sinned**, but cast them down to hell, and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment; And spared not the old world, but saved Noah the eighth person, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly; And turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah into ashes condemned them with an overthrow, making them an example unto those that after should live ungodly; (2 Peter 2:4-6)

**Representation of evil:** I write unto you, fathers, because ye have known him that is from the beginning. I write unto you, young men, because ye have overcome **the wicked one**. I write unto you, little children, because ye have known the Father. (1 John 2:13)

**Representation of evil:** He that committeth sin is of **the devil**; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil. Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God. In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil: whosoever doeth not righteousness is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother. (1 John 3:8-10)

**Enemy:** Yet Michael the archangel, when contending with **the devil** he disputed about the body of Moses, durst not bring against him a railing accusation, but said, The Lord rebuke thee. (Jude 1:9)

**Enemy:** I know thy works, and tribulation, and poverty, (but thou art rich) and I know the blasphemy of them which say they are Jews, and are not, but are the synagogue of **Satan**. (Revelation 2:9)

**Enemy:** I know thy works, and where thou dwellest, even where **Satan's** seat is: and thou holdest fast my name, and hast not denied my faith, even in those days wherein Antipas was my faithful martyr, who was slain among you, where Satan dwelleth. (Revelation 2:13)

**Enemy:** But unto you I say, and unto the rest in Thyatira, as many as have not this doctrine, and which have not known the depths of **Satan**, as they speak; I will put upon you none other burden. (Revelation 2:24)

**Enemy:** I will make them of the synagogue of **Satan**, which say they are Jews, and are not, but do lie; behold, I will make them to come and worship before thy feet, and to know that I have loved thee. (Revelation 3:9)

**Antichrist:** And they had a king over them, which is the **angel of the bottomless pit**, whose name in the Hebrew tongue is **Abaddon**, but in the Greek tongue hath his name **Apollyon**. (Revelation 9:11)



No man might buy or sell, except that hath the mark of the beast, or the number of his name, and his number is 666. (Rev. 13:17)

**Antichrist:** And when they shall have finished their testimony, the **beast** that ascendeth out of the bottomless pit shall make war against them, and shall overcome them, and kill them. And their dead bodies shall lie in the street of the great city, which spiritually is called Sodom and Egypt, where also our Lord was crucified. (Revelation 11:7-8)

**Satan cast out of Heaven:** And there appeared a great wonder in heaven; a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars: And she being with child cried, travailing in birth, and pained to be delivered. And there appeared another wonder in heaven; and behold a **great red dragon**, having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads. And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it was born. And she brought forth a man child, who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron: and her child was caught up unto God, and to his throne. (Revelation 12:1-5)

**Antichrist:** And the **great dragon** was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him. (Revelation 12:9)

**Antichrist:** And I beheld another **beast** coming up out of the earth; and he had two horns like a lamb, and he spake as a dragon. And deceiveth them that dwell on the earth by the means of those miracles which he had power to do in the sight of the beast; saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an image to the beast, which had the wound by a sword, and did live. (Revelation 13:11,14)

**Antichrist:** And I stood upon the sand of the sea, and saw a **beast** rise up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and upon his horns ten crowns, and upon his heads the name of **blasphemy**. And the beast which I saw was like unto a leopard, and his feet were as the feet of a bear, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion: and the dragon gave him his power, and his seat, and great authority. And I saw one of his heads as it were wounded to death; and his deadly

wound was healed: and all the world wondered after the beast. And they worshipped the dragon which gave power unto the beast: and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like unto the beast? who is able to make war with him? And there was given unto him a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies; and power was given unto him to continue forty and two months. And he opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme his name, and his tabernacle, and them that dwell in heaven. (Revelation 13:1-6)

**False Prophet:** For they are the spirits of **devils**, working miracles, which go forth unto the kings of the earth and of the whole world, to gather them to the battle of that great day of God Almighty. (Revelations 16:14)

**Antichrist:** And the third angel followed them, saying with a loud voice, If any man worship the **beast** and his image, and receive his mark in his forehead, or in his hand, The same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out without mixture into the cup of his indignation; and he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb: And the smoke of their torment ascendeth up for ever and ever: and they have no rest day nor night, who worship the beast and his image, and whosoever receiveth the mark of his name. (Revelation 14:9-11)

**Antichrist:** <sup>15:1</sup>And I saw another sign in heaven, great and marvelous, seven angels having the seven last plagues; for in them is filled up the wrath of God. <sup>15:6</sup>And the seven angels came out of the temple, having the seven plagues, clothed in pure and white linen, and having their breasts girded with golden girdles. <sup>16:2</sup>And the first went, and poured out his vial upon the earth; and there fell a noisome and grievous sore upon the men which had the mark of the **beast**, and upon them which worshipped his image. (Revelation 15:1, 6, Revelation 16:2)

**Antichrist:** <sup>8</sup>The **beast** that thou sawest was, and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit, and go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is. And the ten horns which thou sawest are ten kings, which have received no kingdom as yet; but receive power as kings one hour with the beast. These have one mind, and shall give their power and strength unto the beast. These shall make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them: for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings: and they that are with him are called, and chosen, and faithful. (Revelation 17:8, 12-14)

**Antichrist:** And I saw the **beast**, and the kings of the earth, and their armies, gathered together to make war against him that sat on the horse, and against his army. And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast, and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone. And the remnant were slain with the sword of him that sat upon the horse, which sword proceeded out of his mouth: and all the fowls were filled with their flesh. (Revelation 19:19-21)

**Antichrist:** And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. And he laid hold on **the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan**, and bound him a thousand years, And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled: and after that he must be loosed a little season. (Revelation 20:1-3)

## VICTORY OVER SATAN



And when the thousand years are expired, **Satan** shall be loosed out of his prison, And shall go out to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth, Gog, and Magog, to gather them together to battle: the number of whom is as the sand of the sea. And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city: and fire came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them. And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever. (Revelation 20:7-10)

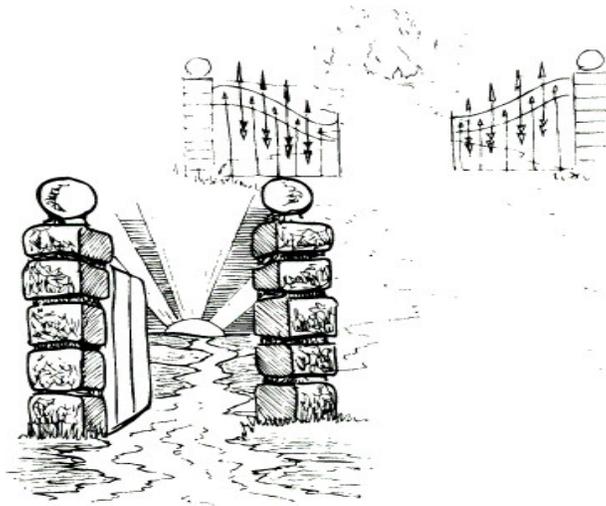
Therefore are they before the throne of God, and serve him day and night in his temple: and he that sitteth on the throne shall dwell among them. They shall hunger no more, neither thirst any more; neither shall the sun light on them, nor any heat. For the Lamb which is in the midst of the throne shall feed them, and shall lead them unto living fountains of waters; and God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes. (Rev. 7:15-17)

God and Satan are as opposite as opposites get, in a way, as far as the east is from the west. Satan has no power over God; God has all power over his creation, including Satan, whom He created. God gives us great power: *As far as the east is from the west, so far hath he removed our transgressions from us.* (Psalms 103:12).

Satan is the destroyer. Jesus is the Savior. Have you accepted Jesus as your Savior? If you will, just pray, “Dear God, I know I am a sinner and that you sent your Son to die for my sins. I accept your free gift and want Jesus to be my personal Savior. Jesus, please enter my life and guide me. In Jesus name I pray. Amen.”

## Chapter 15. Summary & Conclusion

**In the Lord put I my trust: how say ye to my soul, Flee as a bird to your mountain? For, lo, the wicked bend their bow, they make ready their arrow upon the string, that they may privily shoot at the upright in heart. If the foundations be destroyed, what can the righteous do? (Psalms 11:1-3)**



**Enter in at the narrow gate, for wide is the gate that leadeth to destruction. Because narrow is the gate and hard is the way which leadeth unto life. (From Matt. 7:13-14)**

This book has been about foundations. Jesus used the example of foundations in parables. My commercial buildings would not stand without foundations. Not just foundations, *strong* foundations. Remember what happened to the foolish man who built his house upon the sand. He should have built his house upon the rock. Our spiritual foundations, The Law, are laid in the first five books of the Bible, The Pentateuch. The rest of the Bible is based on The Law.

### BIBLICAL SUMMARY

The following few verses summarize this entire book:

The Creation (Chapters 1-3): *In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth. (Genesis 1:1). For in six days the Lord made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day: wherefore the Lord blessed the sabbath day, and hallowed it. (Exodus 20:11).*

Does it Matter What We Believe? (Chapter 4): *And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of man be lifted up: That whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have eternal life. For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved. He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God. (John 3:14-18).*

What Church? (Chapter 5) One that: *I know thy works: behold, I have set before thee an open door, and no man can shut it: for thou hast a little strength, and hast kept my word, and hast not denied my name. Because thou hast kept the word of my patience, I also will keep thee from the hour of temptation, which shall come upon all the world, to try them that dwell upon the earth. Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, which is new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my God: and I will write upon him my new name. (Revelation 3: 8,10,12).*

Abortion (Chapter 6): *Thou shalt not kill. (Exodus 20:13). Will the Lord be pleased with thousands of rams, or with ten thousands of rivers of oil? shall I give my firstborn for my transgression, the fruit of my body for the sin of my soul? (Micah 6:7).*

Homosexuality (Chapter 7): *Thou shalt not lie with mankind, as with womankind: it is abomination. Neither shalt thou lie with any beast to defile thyself therewith: neither shall any woman stand before a beast to lie down thereto: it is confusion. (Leviticus 18:22-23).*

Marriage (Chapter 8): <sup>22</sup>*Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as unto the Lord. <sup>23</sup>For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the church: and he is the saviour of the body. <sup>24</sup>Therefore as the church is subject unto Christ, so let the wives be to their own husbands in every thing. <sup>25</sup>Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it. (Ephesians 5:22-25).*

Hate (Chapter 9): *Thou shalt not hate thy brother in thine heart: thou shalt in any wise rebuke thy neighbour, and not suffer sin upon him. Thou shalt not avenge, nor bear any grudge against the children of thy people, but thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself: I am the Lord. (Leviticus 19:17-18).*

Is There an Afterlife? (Chapter 10): *In my Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, there ye may be also. (John 14:2-3).*

Christians and Witnessing (Chapter 11): *And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature. (Mark 16:15).*

Why Do Christians Suffer (Chapter 12): *I will not boast about myself, except about my weaknesses...To keep me from becoming conceited, there was given me a thorn in my flesh, a messenger of Satan, to torment me. Three times I pleaded with the Lord to take it away from me. But He said to me, "My grace is sufficient for you, for my power is made perfect in weakness." Therefore I will boast all the more gladly about my weaknesses, so that Christ's power may rest on me. That is why, for Christ's sake, I delight in weaknesses, in insults, in hardships, in persecutions, in difficulties. For when I am weak, then I am strong.* (2 Corinthians 12:5b, 7-11 NIV)

Should the Church Keep Up? (Chapter 13): *For ever, O Lord, thy word is settled in heaven. Thy faithfulness is unto all generations: thou hast established the earth, and it abideth. Thy word is true from the beginning: and every one of thy righteous judgments endureth for ever.* (Psalms 119:89,90,160)

Know the Enemy (Chapter 14): *Then saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.* (Matthew 4:10).

Summary and Conclusion (Chapter 15): This is the summary of all summaries: ***Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets.*** (Matthew 22:37-40).

## CREATION VS. EVOLUTION

If we could only prove God! Maybe we can. Listen to this. "So, ladies and gentlemen of the jury, although the defense points out there were no eyewitnesses to the murder, they were not able to produce a credible alibi. We have demonstrated that the accused had plenty of time to get to the scene, haul the body away in his car, and throw it in the river, where we found it the next day. We found hair from the deceased in the accused's trunk. He had a motive due to the large life insurance policy against the deceased that he tried to cash. In summary, even though there are no witnesses to the crime, no crime scene except where the body was found after it floated ashore, and no weapon, you must find the defendant guilty. He had means, motive, and opportunity."

How would you like to be that guy? He's about to go up the river. Who knows who did it? Maybe there is a good but overzealous DA, and poor defense council. Let us listen to the jury's decision. "We the jury find the defendant with respect to the first count of murder in the first degree, guilty!" Yikes! Maybe these people just do not like men with nose hair. To find for first degree murder solely on circumstantial evidence! I am not sticking around to see if they give him the death penalty.

I would love to see a modern day Scopes trial that would allow circumstantial evidence. Now that was a tricky statement because everything the evolutionists have is circumstantial. They have fossils, which are in the present, but they represent something that lived in the past. We do not know when the animal lived or why it died. Dating methods are unreliable. The test

used is the one that fits the desired answer. In fact paleontology is that way. Dr. Gary Parker told me that while he still naively believed in evolution, he did not worry about proof. He is a paleontologist. He thought the geologists had all the proof. The geologists thought the biologists had it, and so on. The truth is, no one had the proof of evolution. Evolution was just a story without God.

“Ladies and gentlemen of the jury. Over the course of this trial, we will prove the existence of God. We will demonstrate, by showing similarities between all the species, of purpose and that there had to be a designer. We will exhibit thousands of examples like the woodpecker showing that the features necessary to make them function all had to occur at once, not by time and chance. We will prove that the fossil record had to be covered quickly in order for the life forms to fossilize, and that the fossil record is the evidence of a worldwide flood; that Noah’s Flood caused the Ice Age; that fossil fuels can form in hundreds of years; the Big Bang violates the law of angular momentum. We will challenge the opposition by asking where the platypus came from; why the salt and sediment amounts in the ocean do not come close to their long ages model; why the fossil record is out of order in so many places. When we conclude our case, you will be convinced that all life was created by plan and purpose, by an almighty being, God. We will read His word to you, where He says He did this. And if that word is true, it all is true, because the Creator God says His word is true from the beginning.”

## HOW WE LIVE

The following passage, Romans chapter 13, is edited from the New Jerusalem Bible:

### Submission to Civil Authority:

“Everyone is to obey the governing authorities, because there are no authorities except from God. God has appointed whatever authorities exist, so anyone who disobeys an authority is rebelling against God's ordinance; and rebels must expect to receive the condemnation they deserve. Magistrates do not bring fear to those who do good things, but only to those who do evil. So if you want to live with no fear of authority, live honestly and you will have its approval; it is there to serve God for you and for your good. But if you do wrong, then you may well be afraid; because it is not for nothing that the symbol of authority is the sword: it is there to serve God, too, as his avenger, to bring retribution to wrongdoers. You must be obedient, therefore, not only because of this retribution, but also for conscience's sake. And this is why you should pay taxes; too, because the authorities are all serving God as his agents, even while they are busily occupied with that particular task. Pay to each one what is due to each: taxes to the one to whom tax is due, tolls to the one to whom tolls are due, respect to the one to whom respect is due, honor to the one to whom honor is due.”

### Love and Law:

“The only thing you should owe to anyone is love for one another, for to love the other person is to fulfill the law. All these: You shall not commit adultery, You shall not kill, You shall not

steal, You shall not covet, and all the other commandments that there are, are summed up in this single phrase: You must love your neighbour as yourself. Love can cause no harm to your neighbour, and so love is the fulfillment of the Law.”

Children of the Light:

“Besides, you know the time has come; the moment is here for you to stop sleeping and wake up, because by now our salvation is nearer than when we first began to believe. The night is nearly over and daylight is on the way. Let us throw off everything that belongs to the darkness and equip us for the light. Let us live decently, as in the light of day, with no drunkenness licentiousness, and no wrangling or jealousy. Let your armor be the Lord Jesus Christ, and stop worrying about how your disordered natural inclinations may be fulfilled.”

God has told us what to believe. He has told us there is but one way to Him. He tells us in the book of Revelation what He likes in churches. His word is eternal. God called murder (abortion) a sin in the Old Testament, and He has not changed His mind. Have nothing to do with abortion.

Shun the homosexual act, lust, divorce, hate, and racism. None of these are of God, but are against God. If we are not for God, then we are against Him.

#### ALCOHOL FOR MEDICINAL USE

There are Christians termed “Legalistic” who stress the need for abstinence from “earthly” substances and pleasures such as alcohol and tobacco. The Bible does not say one word about cigarettes. What about alcohol? Jesus drank wine. So what is the basis for Christians to tell us to avoid the sins of alcohol and tobacco?

Alcohol was used by “Bible heroes” from Noah through Jesus, though in some cases quite a bit of trouble was raised by drunken heroes. Medical reports indicate that some alcohol is actually good for the heart. Tobacco users believe that nicotine calms them down. What is the problem?

Nicotine and alcohol are now recognized as drugs. They are chemical substances. Both are addicting. Though a *little* alcohol might be beneficial to one’s heart, every ounce kills millions of brain cells. Not to worry, you will grow them back. You might also grow fatal diseases. You will definitely grow into a stumbling block. Imagine someone listening as a drunk tells about how God has made his life complete. Tobacco can kill everything else that was not killed by the alcohol.

Peter summarizes the proper attitude toward alcohol and tobacco (as well as other “recreational” drugs): *For the time past of our life may suffice us to have wrought the will of the Gentiles, when we walked in lasciviousness, lusts, excess of wine, revellings, banquetings, and abominable idolatries: Wherein they think it strange that ye run not with them to the same excess of riot, speaking evil of you: Who shall give account to him that is ready to judge the quick and the dead.* (1 Peter 4:3-5.)

We must separate ourselves from the world in order to be a witness to the world. This is why Christians are legalistic. It is not prudence for prudence’ sake.

## CLOSING

God has promised a glorious afterlife for some, eternal punishment for others. In His Word He tells us how easy it is to find eternal life, yet for many this seemingly easy gift is difficult to accept. Why? Do it! Hear the Lord, and use your free will to accept His free gift. Be willing to suffer for God. Christ willingly suffered for you. Our time on earth is a fleeting moment out of eternity. Do not let pride or hardness of heart cause you eternal turmoil.

Our adversary the devil will do all he can to keep you from God. He will do all he can to keep you from witnessing to others. God is Love, Satan is hate. Be victorious over him. As if Satan is not bad enough, we are our own enemy. Satan gave us a push, but we did a lot on our own. How powerful the human mind must be to have everything this screwed up.

Dr. Gary Parker has left *Answers in Genesis* to pursue related interests. Dr. Parker notes “Psalms 19:1-4” beneath his autograph:

<sup>1</sup>The heavens declare the glory of God; and the firmament sheweth his handywork. <sup>2</sup>Day unto day uttereth speech, and night unto night sheweth knowledge. <sup>3</sup>There is no speech nor language, where their voice is not heard. <sup>4</sup>Their line is gone out through all the earth, and their words to the end of the world. In them hath he set a tabernacle for the sun.

That scripture offers powerful spiritual evidence for a Creator-God and a creation by God. Do not turn your back on God and His word. And do not wait a moment. You do not know when you will die, but it could be very sudden and unexpected. Accept Jesus as your Savior now.

Pray, “Dear Father in Heaven, the universe and life in it show you are real and true. Your word is then also true. According to your word, I know that I am a sinner and destined to pay with death. But I believe that you sent your son Jesus to die for me and for the redemption of my sins if I will accept this gift. I accept Jesus into my heart and life as my Personal Savior. Thank you Lord for saving me. Please guide me as I begin my endeavor to live for you. In Jesus name I ask these things, Amen.”

And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to his purpose. (Romans 8:28)

And the peace of God, which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus. (Philippians 4:7).

Writing this book for you and for God has been the most glorious opportunity of my life. May you find salvation and see me in Heaven.

Harold A. Lerch, Sr. P.E.

Glory be to the Father  
and to the Son  
and to the Holy Spirit  
As it was in the beginning  
is now  
and ever shall be  
World without end.  
Amen.

## Appendix

### A Summary of Scripture References

#### CREATION/EVOLUTION

##### BIBLICAL CREATIONISM

<sup>1</sup>In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth. <sup>2a</sup>And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. <sup>3</sup>And God said, Let there be light: and there was light. <sup>5</sup>And God called the light Day, and the darkness He called Night. And the evening and the morning were **the first day**.

<sup>7a</sup>And God made the firmament. <sup>8</sup>And God called the firmament Heaven. And the evening and the morning were **the second day**.

<sup>9a</sup>And God said, Let the waters under the heavens be gathered together. <sup>10</sup>And God called the dry land Earth; and the gathering together of the waters called He Seas. <sup>11a</sup>And God said, Let the earth bring forth vegetation. <sup>13</sup>And the evening and the morning were **the third day**.

<sup>14</sup>And God said, Let there be lights in the firmament of the heaven to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs, and for seasons, and for days, and years; <sup>16</sup>And God made two great lights; the greater light to rule the day, and the lesser light to rule the night: he made the stars also. <sup>17a</sup>And God set them in the firmament <sup>18a</sup>to rule over the day and over the night. <sup>19</sup>And the evening and the morning were **the fourth day**.

<sup>20a</sup>And God said, Let the waters bring forth abundantly the moving creature that hath life, and fowl that may fly above the earth. <sup>21a</sup>And God created great sea monsters, and every living creature that moveth, which the waters brought forth abundantly, after their kind, and

every winged fowl after its kind. <sup>22a</sup>And God blessed them and said, Be fruitful and multiply. <sup>23</sup>And the evening and the morning were **the fifth day**.

<sup>24a</sup>And God said, Let the earth bring forth the living creature after its kind, cattle, and creeping things. <sup>26a</sup>And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness; and let them have dominion...over the earth.

<sup>27</sup>So God created man in His own image, in the image of God created He him; male and female created he them. <sup>29a,c</sup>And God said, Behold, I have given you every herb...and fruit... for food. <sup>30a,c</sup>And to every beast...and fowl...and thing that creepeth...wherein there is life, I have given every green herb for food.

<sup>31b</sup>And the evening and the morning were **the sixth day**.

<sup>2</sup>And on **the seventh day** God ended his work which he had made; and he rested on the seventh day from all his work which he had made. <sup>3a</sup>And God blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it. (Genesis Chapter 1, 2:2-3a).

And the Lord formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul. (Gen. 2:7).

For in six days the Lord made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day: wherefore the Lord blessed the sabbath day, and hallowed it. (Exodus 20:11).

<sup>7</sup>But ask the beasts, and they will teach you; the birds of the air, and they will tell you; <sup>8</sup>or the plants of the earth, and they will teach you; and the fish of the sea will declare to you. <sup>9</sup>Who among all these does not know that the hand of the Lord has done this? <sup>10</sup>In his hand is the life of every living thing and the breath of all mankind. (Job 12:7-10 RSV).

<sup>1</sup>The heavens declare the glory of God; and the firmament sheweth his handywork. <sup>2</sup>Day unto day uttereth speech, and night unto night sheweth knowledge. <sup>3</sup>There is no speech nor language, where their voice is not heard. <sup>4</sup>Their line is gone out through all the earth, and their words to the end of the world. In them hath he set a tabernacle for the sun. (Psalms 19:1-4).

You bound the world together so that it would never fall apart. Psalms 104:5 Living Bible.

I have made the earth, and created man upon it: I, even my hands, have stretched out the heavens, and all their host have I commanded. (Isaiah 45:12).

<sup>1</sup>In the beginning was the Word\*, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. <sup>2</sup>The Same was in the beginning with God. <sup>3</sup>All things were made by Him; and without him was not anything made that was made. (\*From the Greek Logos meaning concept, designation for Christ) (John 1:1-3).

<sup>1</sup>Now faith is assurance of things hoped for, a conviction of things not seen. <sup>2</sup>For therein the elders had witness borne to them. <sup>3</sup>By faith we understand that the worlds have been framed by the word of God, so that what is seen hath not been made out of things which appear. (Hebrews 11:1-3 ASV).

Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created. Revelation 4:11.

## BIBLICAL KNOWLEDGE OF SCIENCE

*The Bible says the world is round.* It is he that sitteth upon the circle of the earth, and the inhabitants thereof are as grasshoppers; that stretcheth out the heavens as a curtain, and spreadeth them out as a tent to dwell in: (Isaiah 40:22).

*The earth is hanging in space.* He stretcheth out the north over the empty place, and hangeth the earth upon nothing. (Job 26:7).

## DINOSAURS & THE BIBLE

One of the sauropods? See *The Great Dinosaur Mystery* by Ken Ham.<sup>4</sup> “Lo, now, (Behemoth’s) strength is in his loins, and his force is in the muscles of his belly. He moveth his tail like a cedar. His bones are like bars of iron. He is the chief of the ways of God. Behold he drinketh up a river, and hasteneth not. (Job 40:15-19, 23).

Perhaps T. Rex? “Canst thou draw out Leviathan with a hook? Canst thou fill his skin with barbed irons, or his head with fish spears? None is so fierce that dares stir him up; I will not conceal his parts, nor his power, nor his comely proportion. His teeth are terrible round about. His scales are his pride. By his sneezings a light doth shine. Out of his mouth go burning lamps, and sparks of fire leap out. Out of his nostrils goeth smoke. His breath kindleth coals, and a flame goeth out of his mouth. When he raiseth up himself, the mighty are afraid. Upon earth there is not his like, who is made without fear. (Job 41: 1, 7, 10, 12, 14-15, 18-21, 25, 33).

## EVOLUTIONISTS & THE BIBLE

Why do the heathen rage, and the people imagine a vain thing? (Psalms 2:1).

He has made everything beautiful in its time; also he has put eternity into man's mind, yet so that he cannot find out what God has done from the beginning to the end. (Ecclesiastes 3:11 RSV).

And they were offended in Him. But Jesus said unto them, A prophet is not without honor, except in his own country, and in his own house. And He did not many mighty works there because of their unbelief. (Matthew 13:57-58).

<sup>13</sup>And they brought young children to him, that he should touch them: and his disciples rebuked those that brought them. <sup>14</sup>But when Jesus saw it, he was much displeased, and said unto them, Suffer the little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God. <sup>15</sup>Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, he shall not enter therein. <sup>16</sup>And he took them up in his arms, put his hands upon them, and blessed them. (Mark 10:13-16).

<sup>3</sup>Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last days scoffers, walking after their own lusts, <sup>4</sup>And saying, Where is the promise of his coming? for since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation. <sup>5</sup>For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water and in the water: <sup>6</sup>Whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished: <sup>7</sup>But the heavens and the earth, which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto

fire against the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men. (2 Peter 3:3-7).

<sup>14</sup>And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousands of his saints, <sup>15</sup>To execute judgment upon all, and to convince all that are ungodly among them of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard speeches which ungodly sinners have spoken against him. <sup>16</sup>These are murmurers, complainers, walking after their own lusts; and their mouth speaketh great swelling words, having men's persons in admiration because of advantage. <sup>17</sup>But, beloved, remember ye the words which were spoken before of the apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ; <sup>18</sup>How that they told you there should be mockers in the last time, who should walk after their own ungodly lusts. <sup>19</sup>These be they who separate themselves, sensual, having not the spirit. (Jude 1:14-20).

## HUMAN ORIGINS & FILLING THE EARTH

And the days of Adam after he had begotten Seth were eight hundred years: and he begat sons and daughters. (Cain's wife was most likely his sister.) (Genesis 5:4).

<sup>1</sup>Now these are the generations of the sons of Noah, Shem, Ham, and Japheth: and unto them were sons born after the flood.

<sup>2</sup>The sons of Japheth; Gomer, and Magog, and Madai, and Javan, and Tubal, and Meshech, and Tiras. <sup>3</sup>And the sons of Gomer; Ashkenaz, and Riphath, and Togarmah. <sup>4</sup>And the sons of Javan; Elishah, and Tarshish, Kittim, and Dodanim. <sup>5</sup>By these were the isles of the Gentiles divided in their lands; every one after his tongue, after their families, in their nations.

<sup>6</sup>And the sons of Ham; Cush, and Mizraim, and Phut, and Canaan. <sup>7</sup>And the sons of Cush; Seba, and Havilah, and Sabtah, and Raamah, and Sabtechah: and the sons of Raamah, Sheba, and Dedan. <sup>8</sup>And Cush begat Nimrod: he began to be a mighty one in the earth. <sup>9</sup>He was a mighty hunter before the Lord: wherefore it is said, Even as Nimrod the mighty hunter before the Lord. <sup>10</sup>And the beginning of his kingdom was Babel, and Erech, and Accad, and Calneh, in the land of Shinar. <sup>11</sup>Out of that land went forth Asshur, and builded Nineveh, and the city Rehoboth, and Calah, <sup>12</sup>And Resen between Nineveh and Calah: the same is a great city. <sup>13</sup>And Mizraim begat Ludim, and Anamim, and Lehabim, and Naphtuhim, <sup>14</sup>And Pathrusim, and Casluhim, (out of whom came Philistim,) and Caphtorim. <sup>15</sup>And Canaan begat Sidon his firstborn, and Heth, <sup>16</sup>And the Jebusite, and the Amorite, and the Girgasite, <sup>17</sup>And the Hivite, and the Arkite, and the Sinite, <sup>18</sup>And the Arvadite, and the Zemarite, and the Hamathite: and afterward were the families of the Canaanites spread abroad. <sup>19</sup>And the border of the Canaanites was from Sidon, as thou comest to Gerar, unto Gaza; as thou goest, unto Sodom, and Gomorrah, and Admah, and Zeboim, even unto Lasha. <sup>20</sup>These are the sons of Ham, after their families, after their tongues, in their countries, and in their nations. <sup>21</sup>Unto Shem also, the father of all the children of Eber, the brother of Japheth the elder, even to him were children born. <sup>22</sup>The children of Shem; Elam, and Asshur, and Arphaxad, and Lud, and Aram. <sup>23</sup>And the children of Aram; Uz, and Hul, and Gether, and Mash. <sup>24</sup>And Arphaxad begat Salah; and Salah begat Eber. <sup>25</sup>And unto Eber were born two sons: the name of one was Peleg; for in his days was the earth divided; and his brother's name was Joktan. <sup>26</sup>And Joktan begat Almodad, and Sheleph, and

Hazarmaveth, and Jerah, <sup>27</sup>And Hadoram, and Uzal, and Diklah, <sup>28</sup>And Obal, and Abimael, and Sheba, <sup>29</sup>And Ophir, and Havilah, and Jobab: all these were the sons of Joktan. <sup>30</sup>And their dwelling was from Mesha, as thou goest unto Sephar a mount of the east. <sup>31</sup>These are the sons of Shem, after their families, after their tongues, in their lands, after their nations. <sup>32</sup>These are the families of the sons of Noah, after their generations, in their nations: and by these were the nations divided in the earth after the flood. (Genesis 10).

<sup>1</sup>And the whole earth was of one language, and of one speech. <sup>2</sup>And it came to pass, as they journeyed...they found a plain...and they dwelt there. <sup>3</sup>And they said one to another, Go to, let us make brick, and...mortar. <sup>4</sup>And they said, Go to, let us build us a city and a tower, whose top may reach unto heaven; and let us make us a name, lest we be scattered abroad upon the face of the whole earth. <sup>5</sup>And the Lord came down to see the city and the tower, which the children of men builded. <sup>6</sup>And the Lord said, Behold, the people is one, and they have all one language; and this they begin to do: and now nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do. <sup>7</sup>Go to, let us go down, and there confound their language, that they may not understand one another's speech. <sup>8</sup>So the Lord scattered them abroad from thence upon the face of all the earth: and they left off to build the city. <sup>9</sup>Therefore is the name of it called Babel; because the Lord did there confound the language of all the earth: and from thence did the Lord scatter them abroad upon the face of all the earth. (Genesis 11:1-9).

And unto Eber were born two sons: the name of one was Peleg; for (because) in his days was the earth divided; [Peleg- literally, division] (1 Chronicles 1:19).

<sup>23</sup>And Jesus himself began to be about thirty years of age, being (as was supposed) the son of Joseph, which was the son of Heli,  
<sup>24</sup>W/w the son of Matthat, w/w the son of Levi, w/w the son of Melchi, w/w the son of Janna, w/w the son of Joseph,  
<sup>25</sup>W/w the son of Mattathias, w/w the son of Amos, w/w the son of Naum, w/w the son of Esli, w/w the son of Nagge,  
<sup>26</sup>W/w the son of Maath, w/w the son of Mattathias, w/w the son of Semei, w/w the son of Joseph, w/w the son of Juda,  
<sup>27</sup>W/w the son of Joanna, w/w the son of Rhesa, w/w the son of Zorobabel, w/w the son of Salathiel, w/w the son of Neri,  
<sup>28</sup>W/w the son of Melchi, w/w the son of Addi, w/w the son of Cosam, w/w the son of Elmodam, w/w the son of Er,  
<sup>29</sup>W/w the son of Jose, w/w the son of Eliezer, w/w the son of Jorim, w/w the son of Matthat, w/w the son of Levi,  
<sup>30</sup>W/w the son of Simeon, w/w the son of Juda, w/w the son of Joseph, w/w the son of Jonan, w/w the son of Eliakim,  
<sup>31</sup>W/w the son of Melea, w/w the son of Menan, w/w the son of Mattatha, w/w the son of Nathan, w/w the son of David,  
<sup>32</sup>W/w the son of Jesse, w/w the son of Obed, w/w the son of Booz, w/w the son of Salmon, w/w the son of Naasson,  
<sup>33</sup>W/w the son of Aminadab, w/w the son of Aram, w/w the son of Esrom, w/w the son of Phares, w/w the son of Juda,  
<sup>34</sup>W/w the son of Jacob, w/w the son of Isaac, w/w the son of Abraham, w/w the son of Thara, w/w the son of Nachor,  
<sup>35</sup>W/w the son of Saruch, w/w the son of Ragau, w/w the son of Phalec, w/w the son of Heber, w/w the son of Sala,  
<sup>36</sup>W/w the son of Cainan, w/w the son of Arphaxad, w/w the son of (Shem), w/w the son of (Noah). which was the son of Lamech,  
<sup>37</sup>W/w the son of Mathusala, w/w the son of Enoch, w/w the son of Jared, w/w the son of Maleleel, w/w the son of Cainan,  
<sup>38</sup>W/w the son of Enos, w/w the son of Seth, w/w the son of Adam, which was the son of God. (Luke 3:23-38).

## PRE-FLOOD WORLD

And Cain knew his wife; and she conceived, and bare Enoch: and he builded a city, and called the name of the city, after the name of his son, Enoch...And Adah bare Jabal: he was the father of such as dwell in tents, and of such as have cattle. And his brother's name was Jubal: he was the father of all such as handle the harp and organ. And Zillah, she also bare Tubalcain, an instructor of every artificer in brass and iron: and the sister of Tubalcain was Naamah. (Gen. 4:17, 20-22).

## LOGISTICS OF NOAH'S FLOOD

And God said, Let there be a firmament in the midst of the waters, and let it divide the waters from the waters. And God made the firmament, and divided the waters which were under the firmament from the waters which were above the firmament: and it was so. Gen. 1:6-7. In the six hundredth year of Noah's life, in the second month, the seventeenth day of the month, the same day were all the fountains of the great deep broken up, and the windows of heaven were opened. (Genesis 7:11).

Make thee an ark of gopher wood; rooms shalt thou make in the ark, and shalt pitch it within and without with pitch. And this is the fashion which thou shalt make it of: The length of the ark shall be three hundred cubits (*450 feet*), the breadth of it fifty cubits (*75 feet*), and the height of it thirty cubits (*45 feet*). A window shalt thou make to the ark, and in a cubit shalt thou finish it above; and the door of the ark shalt thou set in the side thereof; with lower, second, and third stories (*3 stories high*) shalt thou make it. (Genesis 6:14-16).

You clothed the earth with floods of waters covering up the mountains. You spoke, and at the sound of your shout the water collected into its vast ocean beds, and mountains rose and valleys sank to the levels you decreed. And then you set a boundary for the seas, so that they would never again cover the earth. Psalms 104:6-9 Living Bible

#### THE TEN COMMANDMENTS & WHAT WE SHOULD BELIEVE AND DO

1. I am the Lord thy God. Thou shalt have no other gods before me. 2. Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of any thing that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth. Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them: for I the Lord thy God am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate me; And shewing mercy unto thousands of them that love me, and keep my commandments.

3. Thou shalt not take the name of the Lord thy God in vain; for the Lord will not hold him guiltless that taketh his name in vain.

4. Remember the sabbath day, to keep it holy. Six days shalt thou labour, and do all thy work: But the seventh day is the sabbath of the Lord thy God: in it thou shalt not do any work, thou, nor thy son, nor thy daughter, thy manservant, nor thy maidservant, nor thy cattle, nor thy stranger that is within thy gates: For in six days the Lord made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day: wherefore the Lord blessed the sabbath day, and hallowed it.

5. Honour thy father and thy mother: that thy days may be long upon the land which the Lord thy God giveth thee. [This is the

commandment we should do. This is the only commandment with promise.]

6. Thou shalt not kill.  
7. Thou shalt not commit adultery.  
8. Thou shalt not steal.  
9. Thou shalt not bear false witness against thy neighbour.  
10. Thou shalt not covet thy neighbour's house, thou shalt not covet thy neighbour's wife, nor his manservant, nor his maidservant, nor his ox, nor his ass, nor any thing that is thy neighbour's. (Exodus 20:1-17).

Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy might. (Deuteronomy 6:5).

Know therefore that the Lord thy God, He is God, the faithful God, which keepeth covenant and mercy with them that love Him and keep His commandments to a thousand generations; (Deuteronomy 7:9).

<sup>1</sup>In the Lord put I my trust: how say ye to my soul, Flee as a bird to your mountain? <sup>2</sup>For, lo, the wicked bend their bow, they make ready their arrow upon the string, that they may privily shoot at the upright in heart. <sup>3</sup>If the foundations be destroyed, what can the righteous do? (Psalms 11:1-3).

He hath remembered His covenant forever, the word which He commanded to a thousand generations. (Psalms 105:8).

<sup>89</sup>For ever, O Lord, thy word is settled in heaven. <sup>90</sup>Thy faithfulness is unto all generations: thou hast established the earth, and it abideth. <sup>160</sup>Thy word is true from the beginning: and every one of thy righteous judgments endureth for ever. (Psalms 119:89,90,160).

Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. (Matthew 4:4).

But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret; and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly. But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking. (Matthew 6:6-7).

But seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you. (Matthew 6:33).

Enter ye in at the strait gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat: Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it. (Matthew 7:13-14).

He that loveth father or mother more than me is not worthy of me: and he that loveth son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me. And he that taketh not his cross, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me. He that findeth his life shall lose it: and he that loseth his life for my sake shall find it. He that receiveth you receiveth me, and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me. (Matthew 10:37-40).

**This is the summary of all summaries:** Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets. (Matthew 22:37-40).

And the Pharisees came forth, and began to question with him, seeking of him a sign from Heaven, tempting him. And he sighed deeply in his spirit, and saith, Why doth this generation seek after a sign? verily I say unto you, There shall no sign be given unto this generation. (Mark 8:11-12)

And Jesus answering said unto him, It is said, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God. (Luke 4:12).

Love ye your enemies, and do good, and lend, hoping for nothing again; and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be the children of the Highest: for he is kind unto the unthankful and to the evil. Be ye therefore merciful, as your Father also is merciful. Judge not, and ye shall not be judged: condemn not, and ye shall not be condemned: forgive, and ye shall be forgiven: Give, and it shall be given unto you; good measure, pressed down, and shaken together, and running over, shall men give into your bosom. For with the same measure that ye mete withal it shall be measured to you again. (Luke 6:35-38).

Also I say unto you, Whosoever shall confess me before men, him shall the Son of man also confess before the angels of God: But he that denieth me before men shall be denied before the angels of God. And whosoever shall speak a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but unto him that blasphemeth against the Holy Ghost it shall not be forgiven. (Luke 12:8-10).

And seek not ye what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink, neither be ye of doubtful mind. For all these things do the nations of the world seek after: and your Father knoweth that ye have need of these things. But rather seek ye the kingdom of God; and

all these things shall be added unto you. (Luke 12:29-31).

And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of man be lifted up: That whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have eternal life. For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved. He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God. (John 3:14-18).

He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life: and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him. (John 3:36).

Labour not for the meat which perisheth, but for that meat which endureth unto everlasting life, which the Son of man shall give unto you: for him hath God the Father sealed. (John 6:27).

And Jesus said unto them, I am the bread of life: he that cometh to me shall never hunger; and he that believeth on me shall never thirst. But I said unto you, That ye also have seen me, and believe not. (John 6:35-36).

Then said Jesus to those Jews which believed on him, If ye continue in my word, then are ye my disciples indeed; And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free. (John 8:31-32).

Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me. (John 14:6).

<sup>24</sup>And some believed the things which were spoken, and some believed not. <sup>25a</sup>And when they agreed not among themselves, they departed...<sup>26</sup>Saying, Go unto this people, and say, Hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and not perceive: <sup>27</sup>For the heart of this people is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes have they closed; lest they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them. <sup>28</sup>Be it known therefore unto you, that the salvation of God is sent unto the Gentiles, and that they will hear it. (Acts 28:24-28).

<sup>18</sup>But God shows his anger from heaven against all sinful, evil men who push away the truth from them. <sup>19</sup>For the truth about God is known to them instinctively; God has put this knowledge in their hearts. <sup>20</sup>Since earliest times men have seen the earth and sky and all God made, and have known of his existence and great eternal power. So they will have no excuse [when they stand before God at Judgment Day]. (Romans 1:18-20).

<sup>19</sup>Dearly beloved, avenge not yourselves, but rather give place unto wrath: for it is written, Vengeance is mine; I will repay, saith the Lord. <sup>20</sup>Therefore if thine enemy hunger, feed him; if he thirst, give him drink: for in so doing thou shalt heap coals of fire on his head. <sup>21</sup>Be not overcome of evil, but overcome evil with good. (Romans 12:19-21).

He which soweth sparingly shall reap also sparingly; and he which soweth bountifully

shall reap also bountifully. (2 Corinthians 9:6).

<sup>1</sup>Children, obey your parents in the Lord: for this is right. <sup>2</sup>Honour thy father and mother; <sup>4</sup>And, ye fathers, provoke not your children to wrath: but bring them up in the nurture and admonition of the Lord. <sup>5</sup>Servants, be obedient to...your masters according to the flesh, with fear and trembling, in singleness of your heart, as unto Christ;...<sup>7</sup>With good will doing service, as to the Lord, and not to men: <sup>9</sup>And, ye masters, do the same things unto them, forbearing threatening: knowing that your Master also is in heaven; neither is there respect of persons with him. <sup>10</sup>Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might. <sup>11</sup>Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. (Ephesians 6:1-11).

And whatsoever ye do, do it heartily, as to the Lord, and not unto men; Knowing that of the Lord ye shall receive the reward of the inheritance: for ye serve the Lord Christ. But he that doeth wrong shall receive for the wrong which he hath done: and there is no respect of persons. (Colossians 3:23-25).

If we believe not, yet he abideth faithful: he cannot deny himself. (2 Timothy 2:13).

Study to shew thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth. (2 Timothy 2:15).

For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears; And they shall turn away their ears from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables. But watch thou in all things, endure afflictions, do the work of an

evangelist, make full proof of thy ministry. (2 Timothy 4:3-5).

So Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many; and unto them that look for him shall he appear the second time without sin unto salvation. (Hebrews 9:28).

Follow peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord: Looking diligently lest any man fail of the grace of God; lest any root of bitterness springing up trouble you, and thereby many be defiled; (Hebrews 12:14-15).

For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all. For he that said, Do not commit adultery, said also, Do not kill. Now if thou commit no adultery, yet if thou kill, thou art become a transgressor of the law. (James 2:10-11).

Whosoever shall confess that Jesus is the Son of God, God dwelleth in him, and he in God. And we have known and believed the love that God hath to us. God is love; and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him. (1 John 4:15-16).

Jesus said, "He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches;" (Revelation 2:7a).

## GOD'S AUTHORITY

See now that I, even I, am he, and there is no god beside me; I kill and I make alive; I wound and I heal; and there is none that can deliver out of my hand. (Deuteronomy 32:39 RSV).

## THE GOOD NEWS

### GOD'S PROMISE, SALVATION & HEAVEN

Thou wilt shew me the path of life: in thy presence is fulness of joy; at thy right hand there are pleasures for evermore. (Psalms 16:11).

As far as the east is from the west, so far hath he removed our transgressions from us. (Psalm 103:12).

For ever, O Lord, thy word is settled in heaven. (Psalms 119:89).

The Lord is gracious, and full of compassion, slow to anger, and of great mercy. (Psalm 145:8).

Be not rash with thy mouth, and let not thine heart be hasty to utter any thing before God: for God is in heaven, and thou upon earth: therefore let thy words be few. (Ecclesiastes 5:2).

Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you. (Matthew 5:12).

After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. (Matthew 6:9).

But seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you. (Matthew 6:33).

Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. Many will say to

me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity. (Matthew 7:21-23).

<sup>39</sup>And one of the (thieves) which were hanged railed on him, saying, If thou be Christ, save thyself and us. <sup>40</sup>But the other answering rebuked him, saying, Dost not thou fear God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation? <sup>41</sup>And we indeed justly; for we receive the due reward of our deeds: but this man hath done nothing amiss. <sup>42</sup>And he said unto Jesus, Lord, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdom. <sup>43</sup>And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, To day shalt thou be with me in paradise. (Luke 23:39-43).

But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name: But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name: (John 1:11-12).

I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live. (John 11:25).

<sup>1</sup>Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in me. <sup>2</sup>In my Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. <sup>3</sup>And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, there ye may be also. <sup>4</sup>And whither I go ye know, and the way ye know. <sup>5</sup>Thomas saith unto him, Lord, we know not whither thou goest; and how can we know the way? <sup>6</sup>Jesus saith unto

him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me. (John 14:1-6).

Heaven is my throne, and earth is my footstool: what house will ye build me? saith the Lord: or what is the place of my rest? (Acts 7:49).

Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved, and thy house. (Acts 16:31).

For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God; Romans 3:23.

And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to his purpose. (Romans 8:28).

We know these things are true by believing, not by seeing. (2 Corinthians 5:7 LVB).

Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new. (2 Corinthians 5:17).

For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves, it is the gift of God- Not of works, lest any man should boast. (Ephesians 2:8-9).

And the peace of God, which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus. (Phillipians 4:7).

Blessed is the man that endureth temptation: for when he is tried, he shall receive the crown of life, which the Lord hath promised to them that love him. (James 1:12).

I write unto you, little children, because your sins are forgiven you for His name's sake (1 John 2:12).

Who is he that overcometh the world, but he that believeth that Jesus is the Son of God? (1 John 5:5).

He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the midst of the paradise of God. (Revelation 2:7).

Behold, I stand at the door and knock; if any man hear my voice, and opens the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with Me. (Revelation 3:20).

<sup>1</sup>I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea. (*Compare Isaiah 65:17 For, behold, I create new heavens and a new earth: and the former shall not be remembered, nor come into mind.*) <sup>2</sup>And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, <sup>3</sup>And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, and be their God. <sup>4</sup>And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away. <sup>5</sup>And he that sat upon the throne said, Behold, I make all things new. And he said unto me, Write: for these words are true and faithful. <sup>6</sup>And he said unto me, It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. I will give unto him that is athirst of the fountain of the water of life freely. <sup>7</sup>He that overcometh shall inherit all things; and I will be his God, and he shall be my son. <sup>8</sup>But the unbelieving shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone:

which is the second death. <sup>9</sup>And there came unto me one of the seven angels saying, Come hither, I will shew thee the Lamb's wife. <sup>10</sup>And he carried me away in the spirit to a great and high mountain, and shewed me that great city, the holy Jerusalem, descending out of heaven from God, <sup>11</sup>Having the glory of God: and her light was like unto a stone most precious, even like a jasper stone, clear as crystal; <sup>12</sup>And had a wall great and high, and had twelve gates, and at the gates twelve angels, and names written thereon, which are the names of the twelve tribes of Israel: <sup>14</sup>And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and in them the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb. <sup>16</sup>And he measured the city with the reed, twelve thousand furlongs. The length and the breadth and the height of it are equal. <sup>17</sup>And he measured the wall thereof, an hundred and forty and four cubits, according to the measure of a man, that is, of the angel. <sup>18</sup>And the building of the wall of it was of jasper: and the city was pure gold, like unto clear glass. <sup>19</sup>And the foundations of the wall of the city were garnished with precious stones. The first foundation was jasper; the second, sapphire; the third, chalcedony; the fourth, emerald; <sup>20</sup>The fifth, sardonyx; the sixth, sardius; the seventh, chrysolite; the eighth, beryl; the ninth, topaz; the tenth, chrysopterus; the eleventh, jacinth; the twelfth, amethyst. <sup>21</sup>And the twelve gates were twelve pearls: every gate was of one pearl: and the street of the city was pure gold, as it were transparent glass. <sup>22</sup>And I saw no temple therein: for the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are the temple of it. <sup>23</sup>And the city had no need of the sun, neither of the moon, to shine in it: for the glory of God did lighten it, and the Lamb is the light thereof. <sup>24</sup>And the nations of them which are saved shall walk in the light of it: and the kings of the earth do bring their glory and honour into it. <sup>25</sup>And the gates of

it shall not be shut at all by day: for there shall be no night there. <sup>26</sup>And they shall bring the glory and honour of the nations into it. <sup>27</sup>And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defileth, neither whatsoever worketh abomination, or maketh a lie: but they which are written in the Lamb's book of life. <sup>1</sup>And he shewed me a pure river of water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding out of the throne of God and of the Lamb. <sup>2</sup>In the midst of the street of it, and on either side of the river, was there the tree of life, which bare twelve manner of fruits, and yielded her fruit every month: and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations. <sup>3</sup>And there shall be no more curse: but the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it; and his servants shall serve him: <sup>4</sup>And they shall see his face; and his name shall be in their foreheads. <sup>5</sup>And there shall be no night there; and they need no candle, neither light of the sun; for the Lord God giveth them light: and they shall reign for ever and ever. <sup>20</sup>He which testifieth these things saith, Surely I come quickly. Amen. Even so, come, Lord Jesus. (Condensed from Revelation 21:1-27, 22:1-5,20).

## NEW BODIES

<sup>35</sup>But some man will say, How are the dead raised up? And with what body do they come? <sup>36</sup>Thou fool, that which thou sowest is not quickened, except it die: <sup>37</sup>And that which thou sowest, thou sowest not that body that shall be, but bare grain, it may chance of wheat, or of some other grain: <sup>38</sup>But God giveth it a body as it hath pleased him, and to every seed his own body. <sup>39</sup>All flesh is not the same flesh: but there is one kind of flesh of men, another flesh of beasts, another of fishes, and another of birds. <sup>40</sup>There are also celestial bodies, and bodies

terrestrial: but the glory of the celestial is one, and the glory of the terrestrial is another. <sup>41</sup>There is one glory of the sun, and another glory of the moon, and another glory of the stars: for one star differeth from another star in glory. <sup>42</sup>So also is the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption; it is raised in incorruption: <sup>43</sup>It is sown in dishonour; it is raised in glory: it is sown in weakness; it is raised in power: <sup>44</sup>It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body. There is a natural body, and there is a spiritual body. <sup>45</sup>And so it is written, The first man Adam was made a living soul; the last Adam was made a quickening spirit. <sup>46</sup>Howbeit that was not first which is spiritual, but that which is natural; and afterward that which is spiritual. <sup>47</sup>The first man is of the earth, earthy: the second man is the Lord from heaven. <sup>48</sup>As is the earthy, such are they also that are earthy: and as is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly. <sup>49</sup>And as we have borne the image of the earthy, we shall also bear the image of the heavenly. <sup>50</sup>Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; neither doth corruption inherit incorruption. <sup>51</sup>Behold, I shew you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, <sup>52</sup>In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. <sup>53</sup>For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality. <sup>54</sup>So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory. <sup>55</sup>O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory? <sup>56</sup>The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law. <sup>57</sup>But thanks be to God, which giveth us the

victory through our Lord Jesus Christ. (1 Corinthians 15:35-57).

## THE HOLY ANGELS

But of that day and that hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father. (Mark 13:32).

**They guard us:** For he shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee in all thy ways. They shall bear thee up in their hands, lest thou dash thy foot against a stone. (Psalms 91:11-12).

**They are mighty, they do not bring judgment:** Whereas angels, which are greater in power and might, bring not railing accusation against them before the Lord. (2 Peter 2:11).

**Angels watch us:** For I think that God hath set forth us the apostles last, as it were appointed to death: for we are made a spectacle unto the world, and to angels, and to men. (1 Corinthians 4:9).

**The angels from Heaven watched over our Savior:** (Jesus in the Garden of Gethsemane) Saying, Father, if thou be willing, remove this cup from me: nevertheless not my will, but thine, be done. And there appeared an angel unto him from heaven, strengthening him. (Luke 22:42-43).

**The angel at the tomb:** And, behold, there was a great earthquake: for the angel of the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled back the stone from the door, and sat upon it. His countenance was like , and his raiment white as snow: And for fear of him

the keepers did shake, and became as dead men. (Matthew 28:2-4).

## HOW WE LIVE

The following passage, Romans chapter 13, is edited from the New Jerusalem Bible:

### Submission to Civil Authority:

“Everyone is to obey the governing authorities, because there are no authorities except from God. God has appointed whatever authorities exist, so anyone who disobeys an authority is rebelling against God's ordinance; and rebels must expect to receive the condemnation they deserve. Magistrates do not bring fear to those who do good things, but only to those who do evil. So if you want to live with no fear of authority, live honestly and you will have its approval; it is there to serve God for you and for your good. But if you do wrong, then you may well be afraid; because it is not for nothing that the symbol of authority is the sword: it is there to serve God, too, as his avenger, to bring retribution to wrongdoers. You must be obedient, therefore, not only because of this retribution, but also for conscience's sake. And this is why you should pay taxes; too, because the authorities are all serving God as his agents, even while they are busily occupied with that particular task. Pay to each one what is due to each: taxes to the one to whom tax is due, tolls to the one to whom tolls are due, respect to the one to whom respect is due, honor to the one to whom honor is due.”

### Love and Law:

“The only thing you should owe to anyone is love for one another, for to love the other

person is to fulfill the law. All these: You shall not commit adultery, You shall not kill, You shall not steal, You shall not covet, and all the other commandments that there are, are summed up in this single phrase: You must love your neighbour as yourself. Love can cause no harm to your neighbour, and so love is the fulfillment of the Law.”

### Children of the Light:

“Besides, you know the time has come; the moment is here for you to stop sleeping and wake up, because by now our salvation is nearer than when we first began to believe. The night is nearly over and daylight is on the way. Let us throw off everything that belongs to the darkness and equip us for the light. Let us live decently, as in the light of day, with no drunkenness licentiousness, and no wrangling or jealousy. Let your armor be the Lord Jesus Christ, and stop worrying about how your disordered natural inclinations may be fulfilled.”

## JUDGMENT OF CHRIST'S SERVANTS IS FROM GOD, NOT MEN

And these things, brethren, I have in a figure transferred to myself and to Apollos for your sakes; that ye might learn in us not to think of men above that which is written, that no one of you be puffed up for one against another For who maketh thee to differ from another? and what hast thou that thou didst not receive? now if thou didst receive it, why dost thou glory, as if thou hadst not received it?. (1 Corinthians 4:6-7).

## THE CHURCH

### WHAT CHURCH?

Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God and our Saviour Jesus Christ; Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works. (Titus 2:13-14)

### THE SEVEN CHURCHES OF ASIA MINOR

<sup>1</sup>Write a letter to the leader of the CHURCH AT EPHESUS and tell him this: I write to inform you of a message from him who walks among the churches and holds their leaders in his right hand. He says to you: <sup>2</sup>I know how many good things you are doing. I have watched your hard work and your patience; I know you don't tolerate sin among your members, and you have carefully examined the claims of those who say they are apostles but aren't. You have found out how they lie. <sup>3</sup>You have patiently suffered for me without quitting. <sup>4</sup>Yet there is one thing wrong; you don't love me as at first! <sup>5</sup>Think about those times of your first love (how different now!) and turn back to me again and work as you did before; or else I will come and remove your candlestick from its place among the churches. <sup>6</sup>But there is this about you that is good: You hate the deeds of the licentious Nicolaitans, just as I do. <sup>7</sup>Let this message sink into the ears of anyone who listens to what the Spirit is saying to the churches: To everyone who is victorious (Overcomers KJV), I will give fruit from the Tree of Life in the Paradise of God. (Revelation 2:1-7 Living Bible).

<sup>8</sup>To the leader of the CHURCH IN SMYRNA write this letter: This message is from him who is the First and Last, who was dead and then came back to life. <sup>9</sup>I know how much you suffer for the Lord, and I know all about your poverty (but you have heavenly riches!). I know the slander of those opposing you, who say that they are Jews--the children of God--but they aren't, for they support the cause of Satan. <sup>10</sup>Stop being afraid of what you are about to suffer--for the devil will soon throw some of you into prison to test you. You will be persecuted for ten days. Remain faithful even when facing death and I will give you the crown of life--an unending, glorious future. <sup>11</sup>Let everyone who can hear, listen to what the Spirit is saying to the churches: He who is victorious shall not be hurt by the Second Death. (Revelation 2:8-11 Living Bible).

<sup>12</sup>Write this letter to the leader of the CHURCH IN PERGAMOS: This message is from him who wields the sharp and double-bladed sword. <sup>13</sup>I am fully aware that you live in the city where Satan's throne is, at the center of satanic worship; and yet you have remained loyal to me, and refused to deny me, even when Antipas, my faithful witness, was martyred among you by Satan's devotees. <sup>14</sup>And yet I have a few things against you. You tolerate some among you who do as Balaam did when he taught Balak how to ruin the people of Israel by involving them in sexual sin and encouraging them to go to idol feasts. <sup>15</sup>Yes, you have some of these very same followers of Balaam among you! <sup>16</sup>Change your mind and attitude, or else I will come to you suddenly and fight against them with the sword of my mouth. <sup>17</sup>Let everyone who can hear, listen to what the Spirit is saying to the churches: Every one who is victorious shall eat of the hidden manna, the secret nourishment from heaven;

and I will give to each a white stone, and on the stone will be engraved a new name that no one else knows except the one receiving it. (Revelation 2:12-17 Living Bible).

<sup>18</sup>Write this letter to the leader of the CHURCH IN THYATIRA: This is a message from the Son of God, whose eyes penetrate like flames of fire, whose feet are like glowing brass. <sup>19</sup>I am aware of all your good deeds--your kindness to the poor, your gifts and service to them; also I know your love and faith and patience, and I can see your constant improvement in all these things. <sup>20</sup>Yet I have this against you: You are permitting that woman Jezebel, who calls herself a prophetess, to teach my servants that sex sin is not a serious matter; she urges them to practice immorality and to eat meat that has been sacrificed to idols. <sup>21</sup>I gave her time to change her mind and attitude, but she refused. <sup>22</sup>Pay attention now to what I am saying: I will lay her upon a sickbed of intense affliction, along with all her immoral followers, unless they turn again to me, repenting of their sin with her; <sup>23</sup>and I will strike her children dead. And all the churches shall know that I am he who searches deep within men's hearts, and minds; I will give to each of you whatever you deserve. <sup>24</sup>As for the rest of you in Thyatira who have not followed this false teaching (deeper truths, as they call them--depths of Satan, really), I will ask nothing further of you; only hold tightly to what you have until I come. <sup>26</sup>To every one who overcomes--who to the very end keeps on doing things that please me--I will give power over the nations. <sup>27</sup>You will rule them with a rod of iron just as my Father gave me the authority to rule them; they will be shattered like a pot of clay that is broken into tiny pieces. <sup>28</sup>And I will give you the Morning Star! <sup>29</sup>Let all who can hear, listen

to what the Spirit says to the churches. (Revelation 2:18-29 Living Bible).

<sup>1</sup>To the leader of the CHURCH IN SARDIS write this letter: This message is sent to you by the one who has the seven-fold Spirit of God and the seven stars. I know your reputation as a live and active church, but you are dead. <sup>2</sup>Now wake up! Strengthen what little remains--for even what is left is at the point of death. Your deeds are far from right in the sight of God. <sup>3</sup>Go back to what you heard and believed at first; hold to it firmly and turn to me again. Unless you do, I will come suddenly upon you, unexpected as a thief, and punish you. <sup>4</sup>Yet even there in Sardis some haven't soiled their garments with the world's filth; they shall walk with me in white, for they are worthy. <sup>5</sup>Everyone who conquers will be clothed in white, and I will not erase his name from the Book of Life, but I will announce before my Father and his angels that he is mine. <sup>6</sup>Let all who can hear, listen to what the Spirit is saying to the churches. (Revelation 3:1-6 Living Bible).

<sup>7</sup>Write this letter to the leader of the CHURCH IN PHILADELPHIA. This message is sent to you by the one who is holy and true, and has the key of David to open what no one can shut and to shut what no one can open. <sup>8</sup>I know you well; you aren't strong, but you have tried to obey and have not denied my Name. Therefore I have opened a door to you that no one can shut. <sup>9</sup>Note this: I will force those supporting the causes of Satan while claiming to be mine (but they aren't--they are lying) to fall at your feet and acknowledge that you are the ones I love. <sup>10</sup>Because you have patiently obeyed me despite the persecution, therefore I will protect you from the time of Great Tribulation and temptation, which will come upon the world to test everyone alive.

<sup>11</sup>Look, I am coming soon! Hold tightly to the little strength you have--so that no one will take away your crown. <sup>12</sup>As for the one who conquers, I will make him a pillar in the temple of my God; he will be secure, and will go out no more; and I will write my God's Name on him, and he will be a citizen in the city of my God--the New Jerusalem, coming down from heaven from my God; and he will have my new Name inscribed upon him. <sup>13</sup>Let all who can hear, listen to what the Spirit is saying to the churches. (Revelation 3:7-13 Living Bible).

<sup>14</sup>Write this letter to the leader of the CHURCH IN LAODICEA: This message is from the one who stands firm, the faithful and true Witness [of all that is or was or evermore shall be], the primeval source of God's creation: <sup>15</sup>I know you well--you are neither hot nor cold; I wish you were one or the other! <sup>16</sup>But since you are merely lukewarm, I will spit you out of my mouth! <sup>17</sup>You say, I am rich, with everything I want; I don't need a thing! And you don't realize that spiritually you are wretched and miserable and poor and blind and naked. <sup>18</sup>My advice to you is to buy pure gold from me, gold purified by fire--only then will you truly be rich. And to purchase from me white garments, clean and pure, so you won't be naked and ashamed; and to get medicine from me to heal your eyes and give you back your sight. <sup>19</sup>I continually discipline and punish everyone I love; so I must punish you, unless you turn from your indifference and become enthusiastic about the things of God. <sup>20</sup>Look! I have been standing at the door and I am constantly knocking. If anyone hears me calling him and opens the door, I will come in and fellowship with him and he with me. <sup>21</sup>I will let every one who conquers sit beside me on my throne, just as I took my place with my Father on his throne when I had conquered. <sup>22</sup>Let those who can

hear, listen to what the Spirit is saying to the churches." (Revelation 3:14-22 Living Bible).

## THE CHURCH AND MODERN TIMES

<sup>89</sup>For ever, O Lord, thy word is settled in heaven. <sup>90</sup>Thy faithfulness is unto all generations: thou hast established the earth, and it abideth. <sup>160</sup>Thy word is true from the beginning: and every one of thy righteous judgments endureth for ever. (Psalms 119:89,90,160).

## THE ECUMENICAL CHURCH

Babylon the Great, The Mother of Harlots and Abominations of the Earth" (Revelation 17:5).

And (the angel) cried mightily with a strong voice, saying, Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird. (Revelation 18:2).

## HYPOCRITES AND THE "SEVEN WOES"

<sup>1</sup>Then spake Jesus to the multitude, and to his disciples, <sup>2</sup>Saying, The scribes and the Pharisees sit in Moses' seat: <sup>3</sup>All therefore whatsoever they bid you observe, that observe and do; *but do not ye after their works: for they say, and do not.* <sup>12</sup>And whosoever shall exalt himself shall be abased; and *he that shall humble himself shall be exalted.* <sup>13</sup>But **woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites!** for ye shut up the kingdom of heaven against men: for ye neither go in yourselves, neither suffer

ye them that are entering to go in. <sup>14</sup>**Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites!** for ye devour widows' houses, and for a pretence make long prayer: therefore ye shall receive the greater damnation. <sup>15</sup>**Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites!** for ye compass sea and land to make one proselyte, and when he is made, ye make him twofold more the child of hell than yourselves. <sup>16</sup>Woe unto you, ye blind guides, which say, Whosoever shall swear by the temple, it is nothing; but whosoever shall swear by the gold of the temple, he is a debtor! <sup>17</sup>Ye fools and blind: for whether is greater, the gold, or the temple that sanctifieth the gold? <sup>23</sup>**Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites!** for ye pay tithe of mint and anise and cummin, and have omitted the weightier matters of the law, judgment, mercy, and faith: these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone. <sup>24</sup>Ye blind guides, which strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel. <sup>25</sup>**Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites!** for ye make clean the outside of the cup and of the platter, but within they are full of extortion and excess. <sup>26</sup>Thou blind Pharisee, cleanse first that which is within the cup and platter, that the outside of them may be clean also. <sup>27</sup>**Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites!** for ye are like unto whited sepulchres, which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within full of dead men's bones, and of all uncleanness. <sup>28</sup>Even so ye also outwardly appear righteous unto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisy and iniquity. <sup>29</sup>**Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites!** because ye build the tombs of the prophets, and garnish the sepulchres of the righteous, <sup>30</sup>And say, If we had been in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets. <sup>31</sup>Wherefore ye be witnesses unto yourselves, that ye are the children of them which killed the prophets.

<sup>32</sup>Fill ye up then the measure of your fathers. <sup>33</sup>Ye serpents, ye generation of vipers, how can ye escape the damnation of hell? (Matthew 23:1-3, 12-17, 23-33).

## OUR WALK WITH GOD

### GOD, CHILDREN, & ABORTION

If two men are fighting, and in the process hurt a pregnant woman so that she has a miscarriage, but she lives, then the man who injured her shall be fined whatever amount the woman's husband shall demand, and as the judges approve. (Exodus 21:22).

Keep thee far from a false matter; and the innocent and righteous slay thou not: for I will not justify the wicked. (Exodus 23:7).

We will not hide them from their children, shewing to the generation to come the praises of the Lord, and his strength, and his wonderful works that he hath done. For he established a testimony in Jacob, and appointed a law in Israel, which he commanded our fathers, that they should make them known to their children: That the generation to come might know them, even the children which should be born; who should arise and declare them to their children: That they might set their hope in God, and not forget the works of God, but keep his commandments: (Psalms 78:4-7).

Lo, children are an heritage of the Lord: and the fruit of the womb is his reward. As arrows are in the hand of a mighty man; so are children of one's youth. Happy is the man that hath his quiver full of them: they shall not be ashamed, but they shall speak with the enemies in the gate. (Psalm 127:3-5).

Thy wife shall be as a fruitful vine by the sides of thine house: thy children like olive plants round about thy table. (Psalm 128:3).

For thou hast possessed my reins: thou hast covered me in my mother's womb. I will praise thee; for I am fearfully and wonderfully made: marvelous are thy works; and that my soul knoweth right well. My substance was not hid from thee, when I was made in secret, and curiously wrought in the lowest parts of the earth. (Psalms 139:13-15).

The highway of the upright is to depart from evil: he that keepeth his way preserveth his soul. Pride goeth before destruction, and an haughty spirit before a fall. Better it is to be of an humble spirit with the lowly, than to divide the spoil with the proud. (Proverbs 16:17-19).

Children's children are the crown of old men; and the glory of children are their fathers. (Proverbs 17:6).

**The Prophet Jeremiah:** Then the word of the Lord came unto me saying, Before I formed thee in the womb, I knew thee; and before thou camest forth out of the womb, I sanctified thee, and I ordained thee a prophet unto the nations. (Jeremiah 1:4-5).

Will the Lord be pleased with thousands of rams, or with ten thousands of rivers of oil? shall I give my firstborn for my transgression, the fruit of my body for the sin of my soul? (Micah 6:7).

Suffer the little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God. Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, he shall not enter

therein. And he took them up in his arms, put his hands upon them, and blessed them. (Mark 10:14b-16).

**John the Baptist:** But the angel said unto him, Fear not, Zacharias: for thy prayer is heard; and thy wife Elisabeth shall bear thee a son, and thou shalt call his name John. And thou shalt have joy and gladness; and many shall rejoice at his birth. For he shall be great in the sight of the Lord, and shall drink neither wine nor strong drink; and he shall be filled with the Holy Ghost, even from his mother's womb. (Luke 1:13-15).

Jesus said, "I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live" (John 11:25).

Therefore, brethren, we are debtors, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh. For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live. (Romans 8:12-13).

<sup>18</sup>All these new things are from God who brought us back to himself through what Christ Jesus did. And God has given us the privilege of urging everyone to come into his favor and be reconciled to him. <sup>19</sup>For God was in Christ, restoring the world to himself, no longer counting men's sins against them but blotting them out. This is the wonderful message he has given us to tell others. <sup>21</sup>We are Christ's ambassadors. God is using us to speak to you: we beg you, as though Christ himself were here pleading with you, receive the love he offers you--be reconciled to God. (Living Bible 2 Corinthians 5:18-20).

And they that are Christ's have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts. (Galatians 5:24).

Flee also youthful lusts: but follow righteousness, faith, charity, peace, with them that call on the Lord out of a pure heart. (2 Timothy 2:22).

From whence come wars and fightings among you? come they not hence, even of your lusts that war in your members? Ye lust, and have not: ye kill, and desire to have, and cannot obtain: ye fight and war, yet ye have not, because ye ask not. Ye ask, and receive not, because ye ask amiss, that ye may consume it upon your lusts. Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the enemy of God. (James 4:1-4).

As obedient children, not fashioning yourselves according to the former lusts in your ignorance: But as he which hath called you is holy, so be ye holy in all manner of conversation; Because it is written, Be ye holy; for I am holy (1 Peter 1:14-16).

Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust. (2 Peter 1:4).

John said, "I write unto you, little children, because your sins are forgiven you for His name's sake" (1 John 2:12).

For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world. And the world passeth away, and the lust thereof: but he that doeth the will of God abideth for ever. (1 John 2:16-17).

Beloved, let us love one another: for love is of God; and every one that loveth is born of God, and knoweth God. He that loveth not

knoweth not God; for God is love. (1 John 4:7-8).

How that they told you there should be mockers in the last time, who should walk after their own ungodly lusts. These be they who separate themselves, sensual, having not the spirit. (Jude 1:18-19).

## WITNESSING

I have told everyone the Good News that you forgive people's sins. I have not been timid about it, as you well know, O Lord. (Psalms 40:9 Living Bible).

And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature. (Mark 16:15).

And he sent us to preach the Good News everywhere and to testify that Jesus is ordained of God to be the Judge of all--living and dead. (Acts 10:42 Living Bible).

For I am not ashamed of this Good News about Christ. It is God's powerful method of bringing all who believe it to heaven. This message was preached first to the Jews alone, but now everyone is invited to come to God in this same way. (Romans 1:16 Living Bible).

<sup>1</sup>It is God himself, in his mercy, who has given us this wonderful work [of telling his Good News to others ], and so we never give up. <sup>2</sup>We do not try to trick people into believing--we are not interested in fooling anyone. We never try to get anyone to believe that the Bible teaches what it doesn't. All such shameful methods we forego. We stand in the presence of God as we speak and so we tell the truth, as all who know us will agree. <sup>3</sup>If the Good News we preach is

hidden to anyone, it is hidden from the one who is on the road to eternal death. (2 Corinthians 4:1-3 Living Bible).

<sup>11</sup>Put on all of God's armor so that you will be able to stand safe against all strategies and tricks of Satan. <sup>12</sup>For we are not fighting against people made of flesh and blood, but against persons without bodies--the evil rulers of the unseen world, those mighty satanic beings and great evil princes of darkness who rule this world; and against huge numbers of wicked spirits in the spirit world. <sup>13</sup>So use every piece of God's armor to resist the enemy whenever he attacks, and when it is all over, you will still be standing up. <sup>14</sup>But to do this, you will need the strong belt of truth and the breastplate of God's approval. <sup>15</sup>Wear shoes that are able to speed you on as you preach the Good News of peace with God. <sup>16</sup>In every battle you will need faith as your shield to stop the fiery arrows aimed at you by Satan. <sup>17</sup>And you will need the helmet of salvation and the sword of the Spirit--which is the Word of God. <sup>18</sup>Pray all the time. Ask God for anything in line with the Holy Spirit's wishes. Plead with him, reminding him of your needs, and keep praying earnestly for all Christians everywhere. (Ephesians 6:11-18 Living Bible).

But sanctify the Lord in your hearts, and be ready always to give an answer to every man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you, with meekness and fear, Having a good conscience, that, whereas they speak evil of you, as of evildoers, they may be ashamed that falsely accuse your good manner of life in Christ. (1 Peter 3:15-16).

GOD LOVES US: *For God loved the world so much that he gave his only Son so that anyone who believes in him shall not perish but have eternal life.* (John 3:16.)

MAN IS SINFUL (DISOBEDIENT TO GOD): Yes, all have sinned; all fall short of God's glorious ideal; (Romans 3:23.)

DEATH & SICKNESS ARE DUE TO SIN: <sup>16a</sup>*God said to the woman, ``You shall bear children in intense pain and suffering; you shall welcome your husband's affections."* <sup>17</sup>*And to Adam, God said, ``Because you ate the fruit when I told you not to, I have placed a curse upon the soil. All your life you will struggle to (live) from it. <sup>8</sup>*It will grow thorns and thistles. <sup>19</sup>All your life you will sweat to master it, until your dying day. Then you will return to the ground from which you came. For you were made from the ground, and to the ground you will return."* Genesis 3:16-19.*

SIN HAS PENALTY: *For the wages of sin is death, but the free gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.* Romans 6:23.

JESUS CHRIST PAID OUR PENALTY WITH HIS LIFE: <sup>6</sup>*When we were utterly helpless with no way of escape, Christ came at just the right time and died for us sinners who had no use for him. <sup>7</sup>Even if we were good, we really wouldn't expect anyone to die for us, though, of course, that might be barely possible. <sup>8</sup>But God showed his great love for us by sending Christ to die for us while we were still sinners.* (Romans 5:6-8.)

THE GIFT OF SALVATION IS FREE: How could a price be placed on Christ's death and resurrection? <sup>8</sup>*Because of his kindness (grace) you have been saved through trusting Christ. And even trusting is not of yourselves; it too is a gift from God. <sup>9</sup>Salvation is not a reward for the good we have done, so none of us can take any credit for it.* (Ephesians 2:8-9.)

WE MUST RECEIVE CHRIST: A gift is only a gift if you accept it. *But to all who received him, he gave the right to become children of God. All they needed to do was to trust him to save them.* (John 1:12.)

CHRIST IS A “PERSONAL” SAVIOR: Unlike most gods of the world, the True God cares about each of us. Jesus died for each one of us. He is a Personal God, a Personal Savior for those who accept Him. When any one receives Christ as savior, that one’s name is recorded in Heaven. *Nothing evil will be permitted in (Heaven)--no one immoral or dishonest--but only those whose names are written in the Lamb's Book of Life.* (Revelation 21:27.)

### CALVINISM

<sup>15</sup>That whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have eternal life. <sup>16</sup>For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. <sup>17</sup>For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved. <sup>18</sup>He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God. (John 3:15-18).

<sup>25</sup>Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live: <sup>26</sup>And whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die. Believest thou this? (John 11:25-26).

And it shall come to pass, that whosoever shall call on the name of the Lord shall be saved. (Acts 2:21).

<sup>28</sup>And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to his purpose. <sup>29</sup>For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of

his Son, that he might be the firstborn among many brethren. <sup>30</sup>Moreover whom he did predestinate, them he also called: and whom he called, them he also justified: and whom he justified, them he also glorified. (Romans 8:28-30).

<sup>3</sup>Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ: <sup>4</sup>According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love: <sup>5</sup>Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will, <sup>6</sup>To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in the beloved. (Ephesians 1:3-6).

Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through sanctification of the spirit, unto obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ: Grace unto you, and peace, be multiplied. (1 Peter 1:2).

### CHRISTIANS, SUFFERING, AND HEALING

Heal me, O Lord, and I shall be healed; save me, and I shall be saved: for thou art my praise. (Jeremiah 17:14).

For I will restore health unto thee, and I will heal thee of thy wounds, saith the Lord; (Jeremiah 30:17a).

<sup>13a</sup>Is any among you afflicted? let him pray.

<sup>14</sup>Is any sick among you? let him call for the elders of the church; and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord: <sup>15</sup>And the prayer of faith shall save the sick, and the Lord shall raise him up; and if he have committed sins, they shall be

forgiven him. <sup>16</sup>Confess your faults one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be healed. The effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much. (James 5:13a-16).

#### OUR PRAYERS FOR HEALING

<sup>6</sup>But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret; and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly.<sup>7</sup>But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking. <sup>8</sup>Be not ye therefore like unto them: for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask him. (Matthew 6:6-8).

Therefore I say unto you, What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them. (Mark 11:24).

The life is more than meat, and the body is more than raiment. Consider the ravens: for they neither sow nor reap; which neither have storehouse nor barn; and God feedeth them: how much more are ye better than the fowls? (Luke 12:23-24).

<sup>12</sup>Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater works than these shall he do; because I go unto my Father. <sup>13</sup>And whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son. (John 14:12-13).

Concerning spiritual gifts, brethren, I would not have you ignorant. Now ye are the body of Christ, and members in particular. And God hath set some in the church, first

apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helps, governments, diversities of tongues. (1 Cor 12:1, 27-28).

<sup>5b</sup>I will not boast about myself, except about my weaknesses...<sup>7</sup>To keep me from becoming conceited because of these surpassingly great revelations, there was given me a thorn in my flesh, a messenger of Satan, to torment me. <sup>8</sup>Three times I pleaded with the Lord to take it away from me. <sup>9</sup>But He said to me, "My grace is sufficient for you, for my power is made perfect in weakness." <sup>10</sup>Therefore I will boast all the more gladly about my weaknesses, so that Christ's power may rest on me. <sup>11</sup>That is why, for Christ's sake, I delight in weaknesses, in insults, in hardships, in persecutions, in difficulties. For when I am weak, then I am strong. (2 Cor. 12 NIV)

<sup>14</sup>Is any sick among you? let him call for the elders of the church; and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord: <sup>15</sup>And the prayer of faith shall save the sick, and the Lord shall raise him up; and if he have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him. (James 5:14-15).

<sup>14</sup>And this is the confidence that we have in him, that, if we ask any thing according to his will, he heareth us: <sup>15</sup> And if we know that he hear us, whatsoever we ask, we know that we have the petitions that we desired of him. (1 John 5:14-15).

#### ALCOHOL, DRUGS, AND TOBACCO

For the time past of our life may suffice us to have wrought the will of the Gentiles, when we walked in lasciviousness, lusts, excess of wine, revellings, banquetings, and abominable idolatries: Wherein they think it

strange that ye run not with them to the same excess of riot, speaking evil of you: Who shall give account to him that is ready to judge the quick and the dead. (1 Peter 4:3-5).

## SEXUALITY

### MARRIAGE, SEX, LUST, HOMOSEXUALITY

<sup>18</sup>And the Lord God said, It is not good that the man should be alone; I will make him an help meet for him. <sup>21</sup>And the Lord God caused a deep sleep to fall upon Adam, and he slept: and he took one of his ribs, and closed up the flesh instead thereof; <sup>22</sup>And the rib, which the Lord God had taken from man, made he a woman, and brought her unto the man. <sup>23</sup>And Adam said, This is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh: she shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of Man. <sup>24</sup>Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh. (Genesis 2:18, 21-24).

Thou shalt not lie carnally with thy neighbor's wife (Leviticus 18:20).

<sup>22</sup>You shall not lie with a male as with a woman; it is an abomination. (Leviticus 18:22)

<sup>24</sup>Do not defile yourselves by any of these (lusts), for by all these the nations I am casting out before you defiled themselves; <sup>25</sup>and the land became defiled, so that I punished its iniquity, and the land vomited out its inhabitants. (Leviticus 18:24-25 RSV).

There was homosexuality throughout the land, and the people of Judah became as depraved as the heathen nations which the Lord drove out to make room for his people. (1 Kings 14:24 Living Bible).

And he broke down the houses of the male cult prostitutes which were in the house of the Lord, where the women wove hangings for the Asherah. (2 Kings 23:7 RSV).

<sup>27</sup>Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery: <sup>28</sup>But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart. <sup>31</sup>It hath been said, Whosoever shall put away his wife, let him give her a writing of divorcement: <sup>32</sup>But I say unto you, That whosoever shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, causeth her to commit adultery: and whosoever shall marry her that is divorced committeth adultery. (Matthew 5:27-28, 31-32).

<sup>6</sup>But from the beginning of the creation God made them male and female. <sup>7</sup>For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and cleave to his wife; <sup>8</sup>And they twain shall be one flesh: so then they are no more twain, but one flesh. <sup>9</sup>What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder. <sup>10</sup>And in the house his disciples asked him again of the same matter. <sup>11</sup>And he saith unto them, Whosoever shall put away his wife, and marry another, committeth adultery against her. <sup>12</sup>And if a woman shall put away her husband, and be married to another, she committeth adultery. (Mark 10:6-12).

<sup>13a</sup>Now the body is not for fornication, but for the Lord; and the Lord for the body. <sup>18</sup>Flee fornication. Every sin that a man doeth is without the body; but he that

committeth fornication sinneth against his own body. <sup>19</sup>What? know ye not that your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost which is in you, which ye have of God, and ye are not your own? (1 Corinthians 6:13b, 18-19).

<sup>22</sup>Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as unto the Lord. <sup>23</sup>For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the church: and he is the saviour of the body. <sup>24</sup>Therefore as the church is subject unto Christ, so let the wives be to their own husbands in every thing. <sup>25</sup>Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it; <sup>26</sup>That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word, <sup>27</sup>That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish. <sup>28</sup>So ought men to love their wives as their own bodies. He that loveth his wife loveth himself. <sup>29</sup>For no man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourisheth and cherisheth it, even as the Lord the church: <sup>30</sup>For we are members of his body, of his flesh, and of his bones. <sup>31</sup>For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joined unto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh. <sup>32</sup>This is a great mystery: but I speak concerning Christ and the church. <sup>33</sup>Nevertheless let every one of you in particular so love his wife even as himself; and the wife see that she reverence her husband. (Ephesians 5:22-33).

Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as it is fit in the Lord. Husbands, love your wives, and be not bitter against them. (Colossians 3:18-19).

For this is the will of God, even your sanctification, that ye should abstain from fornication: (1 Thessalonians 4:3).

Marriage is honourable in all, and the bed undefiled: but whoremongers and adulterers God will judge. (Hebrews 13:4).

<sup>1</sup>Likewise, ye wives, be in subjection to your own husbands; that, if any obey not the word, they also may without the word be won by the conversation of the wives; <sup>7</sup>Likewise, ye husbands, dwell with them according to knowledge, giving honour unto the wife, as unto the weaker vessel, and as being heirs together of the grace of life; that your prayers be not hindered. (1 Peter 3:1, 7).

*Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour:* (1 Peter 5:8).

For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world. And the world passeth away, and the lust thereof: but he that doeth the will of God abideth for ever. (1 John 2:16-17).

## HOW TO DEFEAT LUST

As far as the east is from the west, so far hath he removed our transgressions from us. (Psalm 103:12). The Lord is gracious, and full of compassion, slow to anger, and of great mercy. (Psalm 145:8).

Jesus went unto the Mount of Olives. And the scribes and Pharisees brought unto Him a woman taken in adultery; and when they had set her in the midst, they say unto Him, Master, this woman was taken in adultery, in the very act. Now Moses in the law commanded us, that such should be stoned: but what sayest thou? This they said, tempting Him, but Jesus stooped down, and

with His finger wrote on the ground, as though He heard them not. So when they continued asking Him, He lifted up himself, and said unto them, He that is without sin among you, let him cast the first stone. And again He stooped down, and wrote on the ground. And they which heard it, being convicted by their own conscience, went out one by one, even unto the last: and Jesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midst. When Jesus had lifted up himself, and saw none but the woman, He said unto her, Woman, where are your accusers? Hath no man condemned thee? She said, No man, Lord. And Jesus said unto her, Neither do I condemn thee: go, and sin no more. Then spoke Jesus again unto them, saying, I am the light of the world: he that followeth me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life. (From John 8:1-12).

These things I have spoken unto you, that in me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world. (John 16:33)

Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new. (2 Corinthians 5:17).

This I say then, Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh. For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would. (Galatians 5:16-17).

Blessed is the man that endureth temptation: for when he is tried, he shall receive the crown of life, which the Lord hath promised to them that love him. (James 1:12).

Submit yourselves therefore to God. Resist the devil, and he will flee from you. Draw nigh to God, and he will draw nigh to you. Cleanse your hands, ye sinners; and purify your hearts, ye double minded. (James 4:7-8).

The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgment to be punished: (2 Peter 2:9).

### SODOM AND GOMORRAH

<sup>1</sup>Two angels came to Sodom; Lot was sitting in the gate. When Lot saw them, he rose to meet them, and bowed himself, <sup>2</sup>and said, "My lords, turn aside, I pray you, to your servant's house and spend the night; then you may rise up early and go on your way." They said, "No; we will spend the night in the street." <sup>3</sup>But he urged them strongly; so they turned aside to him and entered his house; and he made them a feast, and they ate. <sup>4</sup>But before they lay down, the men of Sodom, both young and old, all the people to the last man, surrounded the house; <sup>5</sup>and they called to Lot, "Where are the men who came to you tonight? Bring them out to us, that we may know them." <sup>6</sup>Lot went out of the door to the men, shut the door after him, <sup>7</sup>and said, "I beg you, my brothers, do not act so wickedly. <sup>8</sup>I have two daughters who have not known man; let me bring them to you, and do to them as you please; only do nothing to these men." <sup>9</sup>But they said, "Stand back!" And they said, "This fellow came to sojourn, and he would play the judge! Now we will deal worse with you than with them." Then they pressed hard against the man Lot, and drew near to break the door. <sup>10</sup>But the (angels) brought Lot into the house, and shut the door. <sup>11</sup>And they struck with blindness the men who were at

the door of the house so that they wearied themselves groping for the door. <sup>12</sup>Then the (angels) said to Lot, "Have you any one else here? Sons-in-law, sons, daughters, or any one you have in the city, bring them out; <sup>13</sup>for we are about to destroy this place, because the outcry against its people has become great before the Lord, and the Lord has sent us to destroy it." <sup>14</sup>So Lot went out and said to his sons-in-law, "Up, get out of this place; for the Lord is about to destroy the city." But he seemed to his sons-in-law to be jesting. <sup>15</sup>When morning dawned, the angels urged Lot, saying, "Arise, take your wife and your two daughters who are here, lest you be consumed in the punishment of the city." <sup>16</sup>But he lingered; so the (angels) seized him and his wife and his two daughters by the hand, the Lord being merciful to him, and they set him outside the city. <sup>17</sup>And they said, "Flee for your life; do not look back or stop lest you be consumed." <sup>18</sup>And Lot said to them, "Oh, no, my lords; <sup>19</sup>behold, your servant has found favor in your sight, and you have shown me great kindness in saving my life; but I cannot flee to the hills, lest the disaster overtake me, and I die. (Genesis 19:1-19 RSV condensed).

## RACISM AND HATE

### RACISM

Thou shalt not hate thy brother in thine heart: thou shalt in any wise rebuke thy neighbour, and not suffer sin upon him. Thou shalt not avenge, nor bear any grudge against the children of thy people, but thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself: I am the Lord. (Leviticus 19:17-18).

He that despiseth his neighbour sinneth: but he that hath mercy on the poor, happy is he. (Proverbs 14:21).

Be not hasty in thy spirit to be angry: for anger resteth in the bosom of fools. (Ecclesiastes 7:9).

But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: (Matthew 5:22a).

But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you; That ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven: (Matthew 5:44-45a).

Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself. (Matthew 22:37,39).

But love ye your enemies, and do good, and lend, hoping for nothing again; and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be the children of the Highest: for he is kind unto the unthankful and to the evil. Be ye therefore merciful, as your Father also is merciful. Judge not, and ye shall not be judged: condemn not, and ye shall not be condemned: forgive, and ye shall be forgiven: Give, and it shall be given unto you; good measure, pressed down, and shaken together, and running over, shall men give into your bosom. For with the same measure that ye mete withal it shall be measured to you again. (Luke 6:35-38).

<sup>24</sup>God that made the world and all things therein, seeing that he is Lord of heaven and earth, dwelleth not in temples made with hands; <sup>25</sup>Neither is worshipped with men's hands, as though he needed any thing, seeing he giveth to all life, and breath, and all things; <sup>26</sup>**And hath made of one blood all nations of men for to dwell on all the face**

**of the earth**, and hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation; <sup>27</sup>That they should seek the Lord, if haply they might feel after him, and find him, though he be not far from every one of us: <sup>28</sup>For in him we live, and move, and have our being; as certain also of your own poets have said, For we are also his offspring. (Acts 17:24-28).

Let all bitterness, and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and evil speaking, be put away from you, with all malice: And be ye kind one to another, tenderhearted, forgiving one another, even as God for Christ's sake hath forgiven you. (Ephesians 4:31-32).

Wherefore, my beloved brethren, let every man be swift to hear, slow to speak, slow to wrath: (James 1:19).

He that loveth his brother abideth in the light, and there is none occasion of stumbling in him. (1 John 2:10)

He that loveth not knoweth not God; for God is love. (1 John 4:8).

#### CURSE OF HAM

<sup>20</sup>And Noah...planted a vineyard: <sup>21</sup>And he drank of the wine, and was drunken; and he was uncovered within his tent. <sup>22</sup>And Ham, the father of Canaan, saw the nakedness of his father, and told his two brethren without. <sup>23</sup>And Shem and Japheth took a garment, and laid it upon both their shoulders, and went backward, and covered the nakedness of their father; and their faces were backward, and they saw not their father's nakedness. <sup>24</sup>And Noah awoke from his wine, and knew what his younger son had done unto him. <sup>25</sup>And he said, **Cursed be Canaan; a servant of servants shall he be unto his brethren.** <sup>26</sup>And he said, Blessed

be the Lord God of Shem; and Canaan shall be his servant. <sup>27</sup>God shall enlarge Japheth, and he shall dwell in the tents of Shem; and Canaan shall be his servant. (Genesis 9:20-27).

<sup>15</sup>And Canaan begat Sidon his firstborn, and Heth, <sup>16</sup>And the Jebusite, and the Amorite, and the Girgasite, <sup>17</sup>And the Hivite, and the Arkite, and the Sinite, <sup>18</sup>And the Arvadite, and the Zemarite, and the Hamathite: and afterward were the families of the Canaanites spread abroad. <sup>19</sup>And the border of the Canaanites was from Sidon, as thou comest to Gerar, unto Gaza; as thou goest, **unto Sodom, and Gomorrah**, and Admah, and Zeboim, even unto Lasha. (Genesis 10:15-19).

#### “INTERRACIAL” MARRIAGE AND THE BIBLE

<sup>14</sup>Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? and what communion hath light with darkness? <sup>15</sup>And what concord hath Christ with Belial? or what part hath he that believeth with an infidel? <sup>16</sup>And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people. <sup>17</sup>Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you. (2 Corinthians 6:14-17).

#### SATAN AND SIN

#### WHO MAY NOT ENTER INTO HEAVEN

<sup>21</sup>Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. <sup>22</sup>Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? <sup>23</sup>And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity. (Matthew 7:21-23).

<sup>24</sup>Strive to enter in at the strait gate: for many, I say unto you, will seek to enter in, and shall not be able. <sup>25</sup>When once the master of the house is risen up, and hath shut to the door, and ye begin to stand without, and to knock at the door, saying, Lord, Lord, open unto us; and he shall answer and say unto you, I know you not whence ye are: <sup>26</sup>Then shall ye begin to say, We have eaten and drunk in thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streets. <sup>27</sup>But he shall say, I tell you, I know you not whence ye are; depart from me, all ye workers of iniquity. <sup>28</sup>There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God, and you yourselves thrust out. (Luke 13:24-28).

<sup>24a</sup>How long dost thou make us to doubt? If thou be the Christ, tell us plainly. <sup>25</sup>Jesus answered them, I told you, and ye believed not: the works that I do in my Father's name, they bear witness of me. <sup>26</sup>But ye believe not, because ye are not of my sheep, as I said unto you. <sup>27</sup>My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me: <sup>28</sup>And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand. <sup>29</sup>My Father, which gave them me, is greater than all; and no man is able to pluck them out of my Father's

hand. <sup>30</sup>I and my Father are one. (John 10:24b-30).

#### WATCH FOR FALSE PROPHETS

<sup>12</sup>How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations! <sup>13</sup>For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: <sup>14</sup>I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High. <sup>15</sup>Yet thou shalt be brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit. (Isaiah 14:12-16).

<sup>15</sup>Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves. <sup>16</sup>Ye shall know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles? <sup>17</sup>Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit. <sup>18</sup>A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. <sup>19</sup>Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. <sup>20</sup>Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them. (Matthew 7:15-20).

<sup>23</sup>For you have a new life. It was not passed on to you from your parents, for the life they gave you will fade away. This new one will last forever, for it comes from Christ, God's ever-living Message to men. <sup>24</sup>Yes, our natural lives will fade as grass does when it becomes all brown and dry. All our greatness is like a flower that droops and falls; <sup>25</sup>but the Word of the Lord will last forever. And his message is the Good News that was preached to you. (1 Peter 1:23-25 Living Bible).

<sup>1</sup>Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world. <sup>2</sup>Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God: <sup>3</sup>And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that spirit of antichrist, whereof ye have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world. <sup>4</sup>Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them: because greater is he that is in you, than he that is in the world. (1 John 4:1-4).

#### IS THERE A LITERAL HELL?

The wicked shall be turned into hell, and all the nations that forget God. (Psalms 9:17).

Let death seize upon them, and let them go down quick into hell: for wickedness is in their dwellings, and among them. (Psalms 55:15).

I made the nations to shake at the sound of his fall, when I cast him down to hell with them that descend into the pit: and all the trees of Eden, the choice and best of Lebanon, all that drink water, shall be comforted in the nether parts of the earth. (Ezekial 31:16).

But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall call his brother worthless) shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell fire. (Matthew 5:22).

And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it off, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for

thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell. (Matthew 5:30).

<sup>7</sup>And when the thousand years are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison, <sup>8a</sup>And shall go out to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth <sup>9</sup>And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city: and fire came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them. <sup>10</sup>And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever. (Revelation 20:7-10).

And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works. And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. (Revelation 20:13-14).

#### SATAN'S DECEPTION & FIRST SIN

Now the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field which the Lord God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden? (Genesis 3:1).

Eve replied to Satan that she and Adam could not eat of the tree in the midst of the garden or they would die. *And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die:* (Genesis 3:4). Satan continues, *For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil.* (Genesis 3:5).

Would you like to have a little fun today at Satan's expense? Tell someone about the Creator God that made us, lovingly. And that His Son Jesus Christ died on the cross as atonement for our sins if we will only accept Him. We need to be saved from our sins, sins that displease God but make Satan happy. Lead someone to eternal life and away from Satan. *But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead?* (James 2:20).

## Outline

### **PART I IN THE BEGINNING**

#### CHAPTER 1. THE BREATH OF LIFE

- Gen 1:1-2:3
- John 1:1-3
- Blind Faith?
- Bill and Bob- a Dialogue.
- They Cannot Both Be Right.
- The Creation Account.
- Evolution.
- Teaching Evolution.
- Evolution Text.
- A Faith the Facts Fit.

#### CHAPTER 2. OUT OF AFRICA ARARAT

- Luke 3:23-36a.
- Back to Ararat.
- Luke 3:36b-38.
- “Out-of-Africa.”
- Out of Eve
- Scientific Alternatives to Out-of-Africa.
- Missing Links.
- Nebraska Man.
- Creation Science and “Out-of-Africa.”
- Y2K Theory.
- Further out-of-Ararat.
- Genesis 10.
- Cain’s Wife.
- Logistics of Noah’s Flood.
- Sunken Cities.

#### CHAPTER 3. CAN THE BIBLE AND SCIENCE COMPROMISE?

- Jude 1:14-20.
- Opposites that Oppose.
- *The Origin of Life* (textbook).

- Teaching about Evolution (Instructional Text).
- Pennsylvania Department of Education.
- Kansas Board of Education.
- A “Delicate Flower.”
- Neanderthal Video (made for TV).
- Walking with Dinosaurs (TV movie).
- Compromise: Does That Mean the Bible Is Wrong.
- Hybrids.
- Questions and Theories about Creation.
- The Nice Thing about God.
- A Call to Parents.

### **PART II WHAT DOES GOD SAY ABOUT HOW WE LIVE?**

#### CHAPTER 4. DOES IT MATTER WHAT WE BELIEVE?

- Did God Create “Other” People to Condemn Them?
- What Are the Major Non-Christian Religions?
- Non-Literal Genesis Position.
- Prove the Existence of God, and I Will Believe.
- Is it enough just to believe something?
- Death Row Opinion.
- Well, What Are We to Believe and Do?
- What Should we Not Do?
- Seek Only the Bible for Doctrine.
- Do you just have to do the best you can?
- God’s Way.

#### CHAPTER 5. WHAT CHURCH?

- Hypocrites and the Seven Woes.
- The Seven Churches of Asia Minor.
- Which Member of Which Church Will Go to Heaven.

- Christ's Recommended Church.
- Satan's Recommendation.
- Watch for False Prophets.
- Closing Thoughts.

#### CHAPTER 6. WHICH CHILDREN SHOULD LIVE?

- What Exactly is Abortion, and Why the Conflict?
- The World View.
- What Does God Say?
- A Matter of Convenience.
- How they Kill the Babies.
- Christian Counseling.
- The Adoption Option.
- A Glimmer of Hope.
- What Can You Do?
- Hawaii State Board of Education
- WWJD?

#### CHAPTER 7. ADAM AND EVE, OR ADAM AND STEVE?

- Leviticus 18:22, 24-25.
- New World View of Homosexuality.
- Old World View.
- Biblical View.
- Sodom and Gomorrah.
- Conclusion: Is It Right Or Wrong?
- What To Do?

#### CHAPTER 8. TILL DEATH DO US PART

- Genesis 2:18, 21-24.
- Why Marriage?
- Proper Marital Relationships.
- Ephesians 5:22-33.
- Why Divorce?
- What Constitutes Adultery?
- Sin unto Death.

- Mark 10:10-12, Matthew 5:27-28, 31-32.
- What Is Lust?
- Lust Research.
- How to Defeat Lust.

#### CHAPTER 9. HOW MANY SKIN COLORS ARE THERE?

- Acts 17:24-28.
- How many skin colors are there?
- Color chart.
- So Where Did All the "Shades" Come From?
- Curse of Ham.
- Genesis 10:15-19.
- More Sin & Confounded Language.
- Genesis 11:1-9.
- The Days of Peleg.
- If Only One Skin Color, How Many Races?
- Science and Racism.
- "Interracial" Marriage and the Bible.
- 2 Corinthians 6:14-17.
- Marriage Chart.
- Prejudice.
- Hate Groups.
- Love Groups and Ending Racism.
- Luke 6:35-38.

### **PART III WHERE ARE WE GOING?**

#### CHAPTER 10. IS THERE AN AFTERLIFE?

- John 14:2-6.
- There Is a Heaven.
- God Rules from and Dwells in Heaven.
- Heaven is Physical and Joyous.
- Revelation 22.
- Witness of the Holy Angels.

- Who May Enter into Heaven?
- John 10:24-30.
- Heaven is Not Open to Everyone.
- Is Jesus the Messiah?
- Is There a Literal Hell?
- How Do You Get into Heaven?

#### CHAPTER 11. CHRISTIAN WITNESSING

- What Is Witnessing?
- Where Should We Witness?
- How to Witness.
- 2 Corinthians 4:1-3.
- Ephesians 6:11-18.
- Defend Your Faith.
- Witnessing to Young People.
- Materials for Witnessing.
- Procrastination.
- Witnessing and Ministering to Other Christians.
- Predestination, Election, and Calvinism.

#### CHAPTER 12. WHY DO CHRISTIANS SUFFER?

- James 5:13a-16.
- Answering our Prayers for Healing.
- God Promises to Meet our Needs.
- What Are our Needs?
- Self Pity.
- 2 Corinthians 12.
- Origin of Death and Disease: Who Is to Blame?
- New Bodies.
- 1 Corinthians 15:35-57.
- Alternative Healing.
- *Why Do Christians Suffer?* by Theodore Epp.

#### CHAPTER 13 SHOULD THE CHURCH KEEP UP WITH THE TIMES?

- Psalms 119:89-90, 160.
- Satan's Deception and First sin.
- Why Does the Church Change?
- The Ecumenical Movement.
- Endorsement of Homosexual Lifestyles.
- Divorce and the Church.
- Modern Science and the Church.
- Separation of Church and State.
- Conclusion.
- 

#### **PART IV DEPART IN PEACE**

#### CHAPTER 14. KNOW THE ENEMY

- The Personality of Satan.
- Victory over Satan.

#### CHAPTER 15. SUMMARY & CONCLUSION

- Biblical Summary.
- Creation vs. Evolution.
- How We Live.
- Alcohol for Medicinal Use.
- Closing.

## Recommended Reading

Baugh, Carl, and Wilson, Clifford. *Footprints and the Sands of Time*. Oklahoma City, OK, Hearthstone Publishing, Ltd. 1992 (Scientific evidence that man and dinosaurs walked the earth together.)

Chittick, Donald E., Ph.D., *The Puzzle of Ancient Man*, Tualatin, Oregon, Creation Compass, 1997. (Early mankind was much more advanced than we could imagine.)

Epp, Theodore, *Why Do Christians Suffer?* Lincoln, Nebraska, Back to the Bible Publications, 1970.

Gitt, Werner, Prof-Dr., *In the Beginning Was Information*, Bielefeld, Germany, CLV. 1997 English version.

Ham, Ken, *The Great Dinosaur Mystery*, Green Forest, Arkansas, Master Books, 1998.

Ham, Ken, *Genesis and the Decay of the Nations*, Green Forest, Arkansas, Master Books, 1991.

Ham, Ken, *The Lie Evolution*, Green Forest, Arkansas, Master Books, 1987.

Ham, Ken, *Did Adam Have a Belly Button?* Green Forest, Arkansas, Master Books, 1999. (Answers to 172 tough questions.)

Ham, Ken, Snelling, Andrew, Wieland, Carl, *The Answers Book*, Green Forest, Arkansas, Master Books, 1990. (Answers to the 12 most asked questions on Genesis and creation/evolution.)

LaHaye, Tim, *Revelation Unveiled*, Grand Rapids, Michigan, Zondervan Publishing House, 1999

Morris, Henry, Ph.D., *The Remarkable Birth of Planet Earth*, San Diego, CA, Creation-Life Publishers, 1972.

Morris, John, Ph.D., *The Young Earth*, Green Forest, Arkansas, Master Books, 1994.

Parker, Gary, Ph.D., *Creation Facts of Life*, Colorado Springs, Colorado, Master Books, 1994.

Sarfati, Jonathan, Ph.D., *Refuting Evolution*, Green Forest, Arkansas, Master Books, 1999.

Creation Science Foundation Ltd., Snelling, Andrew D., Editor, *The Revised Quote Book*, Acacia Ridge DC, Queensland, Australia, Answers in Genesis, 1990.

## Recommended Reading for Children

*The Great Dinosaur Mystery and the Bible*, Paul S. Taylor, Accent Books, PO Box 15337, Denver, CO 80215, copyright 1987, 1989.

From Answers in Genesis, published by Master Books

A is for Adam

The Creation

The Caring Creator

D is for Dinosaur

Dinosaurs by Design

Dry Bones and Other Fossils

God the Creator

Skeletons in your Closet

Answers in Genesis, PO Box 6330, Florence, KY 41022 USA

Answers in Genesis, PO Box 6302, Acacia Ridge DC, Qld 4110 Australia

Answers in Genesis, PO Box 5262, Leicester LE2 3XU, United Kingdom

Answers in Genesis, PO Box 39005, Howick, Auckland, New Zealand

Answers in Gen., 5-420 Erb St. W., Suite 213, Waterloo, Ontario N2L 6K6 Canada

U.S orders 1-800-778-3390.

Web site [www.answersingenesis.org](http://www.answersingenesis.org)

## Endnotes

- 1 Answers in Genesis, PO Box 6330, Florence, KY 41022 USA  
Answers in Genesis, PO Box 6302, Acacia Ridge DC, Qld 4110 Australia  
Answers in Genesis, PO Box 5262, Leicester LE2 3XU, United Kingdom  
Answers in Genesis, PO Box 39005, Howick, Auckland, New Zealand  
Answers in Gen., 5-420 Erb St. W., Suite 213, Waterloo, Ontario N2L 6K6 Canada
- 2 Ham, Ken, *Did Adam Have a Belly Button?* Green Forest, Arkansas, Master Books, 1999, p. 43.
- 3 Ham, Ken, Snelling, Andrew, Wieland, Carl, *The Answers Book*, Green Forest, Arkansas, Master Books, 1990.
- 4 Ham, Ken, *The Great Dinosaur Mystery*, Green Forest, Arkansas, Master Books, 1998.
- 5 *Teaching about Evolution and the Nature of Science*, National Academy of Science.
- 6 Sarfati, Jonathan, *Refuting Evolution*, Green Forest, Arkansas, Master Books, 1999.
- 7 Donn, Jeff, "Study reinforces 'out-of-Africa' theory of human evolution," Associated Press, The [Sunbury, Pa.] Daily Item, 12/7/00, pA8.
- 8 Excerpted from *Compton's Interactive Encyclopedia*. Copyright © 1994, 1995, 1996, 1997 The Learning Company, Inc. All Rights Reserved.
- 9 Ham, Ken, *Did Adam Have a Belly Button?* Green Forest, Arkansas, Master Books, 1999, p. 175
- 10 Snider, Harold, *That Amazing Book- Genesis!*, Hicksville, NY, Exposition Press, 1977, p. 58.
- 11 Sarfati, Jonathan, *Refuting Evolution*, Green Forest, Arkansas, Master Books, 1999, p. 25.
- 12 Bernard Hagene and Charles Lenay, *The Origin of Life*, Fondation Diderot/La Nouvelle Encyclopedie, Paris, France, 1986.
- 13 Finnerty, John, "Evolution vs. Creation: Some tackle it, some don't," The Daily Item, Sunbury, Pa. USA 12/30/00, p. B3.
- 14 Raffaele, Martha, "New state science standards provoke evolution theorists," The Associated Press, The Daily Item, Sunbury, Pa., USA 2/18/01, p. A1.
- 15 Jackson, Peter, "Board revises science standards, strikes creationism language," The Associated Press, The Daily Item, Sunbury, Pa., USA 7/13/01, p. A3.
- 16 Milburn, John, "New board restores study of evolution," The Associated Press, The Daily Item, Sunbury, Pa., USA 1/15/01, p. B3.
- 17 Compiled from news service reports, "Education board: No creationism in science classes," The Daily Item, Sunbury, Pa., USA 8/4/01, p. A4.
- 18 Sarfati, Jonathan, *Refuting Evolution*, Green Forest, Arkansas, USA Master Books, 1999. pp. 85-86.
- 19 Parker, Gary, *Creation Facts of Life*, Colorado Springs, Colorado, Master Books, 1994, pp72-73)
- 20 Glembocki, Vicki, "Vow of No Silence," *Penn Stater*, Penn State Alumni Association, University Park, Pa., January/February 2001, p. 35.
- 21 *Microsoft® Encarta® Encyclopedia 2001*. © 1993-2000 Microsoft Corporation. All rights reserved.
- 22 "Roe vs. Wade's Jane Roe files friend-of-court briefs opposing abortion," the Associated Press, The Sentinel, Lewistown, Pa., USA 6/1/01, p. A8.

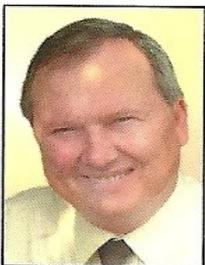
- 23 Branom, Mike, “AMA recommends selling morning-after pill over-the-counter,” The Associated Press, The Daily Item, Sunbury, Pa., USA 12/6/00 p. A6.
- 24 Lucado, Max, *In the Grip of Grace*, Dallas, TX, Word Publishing, 1996.
- 25 Chittick, Donald E., *The Puzzle of Ancient Man*, Tualatin, Oregon, Creation Compass, 1997.

# Did God Really Say That?

***Did God Really Say That?*** Satan's actual words (as recorded in Genesis 3:1) were "Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not...?" Our enemy, Satan, "more subtle than any beast of the field" is a clever deceiver!

The author recognizes that God's Word has not changed from the beginning. Satan continues his deceptions. His great tool of our age is the *lie of evolution*. This book challenges that lie, and explains to readers that the foundations of the Christian faith, beginning with the creation, still stand. The author writes in an enjoyable style and includes Scripture passages within the text to effectively explain how one's belief regarding origins affects our daily lives six thousand years later.

This book is written for all Christians, and for Jews who want to learn how science fits with the fact that God created everything from nothing in six days, as God inspired Moses to record. Christians and Jews worship the same Creator God, and the Jews are part of God's master plan. Our Jewish friends might be interested in why Christians accept Jesus Christ as the Messiah.



**HAROLD LERCH SR.,** is a graduate of the Pennsylvania State University, College of Engineering, and is a Professional Engineer. He has been employed in construction administration and management for a major private-industry corporation for the past thirteen years. Prior to that he was Special Projects Manager for the same corporation, specializing in food manufacturing and material handling.

Harold and his wife of over 30 years, Jeanne, reside near Middleburg, PA. Their grown children, Harold, Jr. and Joanne, have blessed them with five grandchildren: Mariah, Christian, Drew, Kylee, and Shelly. It is advisable not to ask, "Tell me about your grandchildren."

Harold is founder of Word to the World Ministries, a concern that publishes and distributes complimentary witnessing resources.